

# CONTENTS

<b>Tape List .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 10.....</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 11.....</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 12.....</b>	<b>22</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 13.....</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 14.....</b>	<b>29</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 15.....</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 16.....</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 17.....</b>	<b>41</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 18.....</b>	<b>45</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 19.....</b>	<b>48</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 20.....</b>	<b>52</b>
<b>The Angelic Conflict, Part 21.....</b>	<b>56</b>
<b>The Most Important Sign For The Church.....</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>Passover Week.....</b>	<b>63</b>
<b>Satan’s Rebellion and Angelic Salvation .....</b>	<b>67</b>
<b>The Perfect Justice of God Manifested to Angels and Humans.....</b>	<b>71</b>
<b>A Believer’s Energy Must Be Harnessed and Projected in the Right Direction .....</b>	<b>77</b>
<b>Religion: Satan’s Ace Trump.....</b>	<b>81</b>
<b>Passive and Active Arrogance.....</b>	<b>86</b>
<b>In the Millennial Age, Divine Righteousness Is Expressed to Mankind as Never Before.....</b>	<b>90</b>
<b>The Ascension and Session of the Lord Jesus Christ .....</b>	<b>94</b>
<b>The Ascension And Session of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 2 .....</b>	<b>99</b>
<b>The Ascension And Session of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 3 .....</b>	<b>103</b>
<b>The Ascension And Session of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 4 .....</b>	<b>107</b>
<b>The Ascension And Session of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 5 .....</b>	<b>111</b>
<b>A Place of Refuge, Inside the Predesigned Plan of God.....</b>	<b>115</b>
<b>The Doctrine of Separation.....</b>	<b>119</b>
<b>Seraphim and Cherubim Angels.....</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>And There Was a Battle in Heaven; Michael and his Army of Elect Angels Fought Against the Dragon .....</b>	<b>127</b>
<b>Satan’s Cosmic System.....</b>	<b>131</b>

<b>Satan’s Cosmic System, Part 2 .....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>The Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ.....</b>	<b>139</b>
<b>The Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 2.....</b>	<b>143</b>
<b>The Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ, Part 3.....</b>	<b>147</b>
<b>The Doctrine of Authority .....</b>	<b>151</b>
<b>The Blood of the Lamb.....</b>	<b>155</b>
<b>The Blood of the Lamb, Part 2 .....</b>	<b>160</b>
<b>The Blood of the Lamb, Part 3 .....</b>	<b>165</b>
<b>The Strategical and the Tactical Winners.....</b>	<b>169</b>
<b>Anger .....</b>	<b>174</b>
<b>The Rejection of Satan .....</b>	<b>179</b>
<b>When the Time Is Short, Wake Up Before It’s too Late! .....</b>	<b>183</b>
<b>A Thanksgiving Day Remembrance.....</b>	<b>187</b>
<b>Persecution and a Subtle Attack on the Gospel .....</b>	<b>191</b>
<b>Persecution and a Subtle Attack on the Gospel, Part 2 .....</b>	<b>195</b>
<b>Salvation Is Neither Unattainable Nor Unavailable.....</b>	<b>200</b>
<b>God Does His Best Work in Impossible Situations .....</b>	<b>204</b>

# TAPE LIST

- 1825      The Satanic Game Plan. part 1.  
01-05-03      John Farley
- 1826      The Satanic Game Plan, part 2.  
01-07-03      John Farley
- 1827      The Satanic Game Plan, part 3.  
01-08-03      John Farley
- 1828      The Satanic Game Plan, part 4.  
01-09-03      John Farley
- 1829      The Satanic Game Plan, part 5.  
01-10-03      John Farley
- 1830      The Satanic Game Plan, part 6.  
01-15-03      John Farley
- 1831      The Satanic Game Plan, part 7.  
01-17-03      John Farley
- 1832      The Satanic Game Plan, part 8.  
01-19-03      John Farley
- 1833      The Satanic Game Plan, part 9.  
01-22-03      John Farley
- 1834      The Satanic Game Plan, part 10.  
01-24-03      John Farley
- 1835      The Satanic Game Plan, part 11.  
01-26-03      John Farley
- 1836      The Satanic Game Plan, part 12.  
01-29-03      John Farley
- 1837      The Satanic Game Plan, part 13.  
01-31-03      John Farley
- 1838      The Satanic Game Plan, part 14.  
02-02-03      John Farley
- 1839      The Satanic Game Plan, part 15.  
02-05-03      John Farley
- 1840      The Satanic Game Plan, part 16.

- 02-09-03 John Farley
- 1841 The Satanic Game Plan, part 17.  
02-12-03 John Farley
- 1842 The Satanic Game Plan, part 18.  
02-14-03 John Farley
- 1843 The Satanic Game Plan, part 19.  
02-16-03 John Farley
- 1844 The Satanic Game Plan, part 20. The Doctrine of Fear, part 1.  
02-19-03 John Farley
- 1845 The Satanic Game Plan, part 21. The Doctrine of Fear, part 2.  
02-21-03 John Farley
- 1846 The Satanic Game Plan, part 22. The Doctrine of Fear, part 3.  
02-23-03 John Farley
- 1847 The Satanic Game Plan, part 23. The Doctrine of Fear, part 4.  
02-26-03 Pro 28:1, Deu 20:8, Psa 55:1-5 -- John Farley
- 1848 The Satanic Game Plan, part 24. The Doctrine of Fear, part 5.  
02-28-03 2Ti 1:7, Joh 16:33, Phi 1:12-14, Mat 20:17-19 -- John Farley
- 1849 The Satanic Game Plan, part 25. The Doctrine of Fear, part 6.  
03-02-03 Mat 20:17-19, Pro 29:25, Mic 3:7-10, Col 1:9-12 -- John Farley
- 1850 The Satanic Game Plan, part 26. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 1.  
03-09-03 Phi 2:13, Eph 3:20, Rom 8:1, 1Sa 20:27-30 -- John Farley
- 1851 The Satanic Game Plan, part 27. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 2.  
03-12-03 Phi 2:13, Eph 3:20, Rom 8:1, 1Sa 20:27-30 -- John Farley
- 1852 The Satanic Game Plan, part 28. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 3.  
03-14-03 Pro 27:6, Mat 16:23, Joh 8:3-11, Mat 18:15 -- John Farley
- 1853 The Satanic Game Plan, part 29. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 4.  
03-16-03 Gen 3:7-10, 2Sa 12:1-15, Luk 5:27-33, Joh 10:10, Hos 5:15-6:1 -- John Farley
- 1854 The Satanic Game Plan, part 30. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 5.  
03-19-03 Eph 4:29, 1Sa 20:27-30, Eph 6:4, Mat 7:11, 2Co 10:12, Luk 10:38-42-- John Farley
- 1855 The Satanic Game Plan, part 31. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 6.  
03-21-03 2Co 10:12, Luk 10:38-42, Psa 38:3-5, Luk 15:21-30 -- John Farley
- 1856 The Satanic Game Plan, part 32. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 7.

03-23-03 2Co 12:8-10, Jam 4:17, Hos 4:6, Gal 1:6-9, 2Sa 18:33, Psa 103:13-18 -- John Farley

1857 The Satanic Game Plan, part 33. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 8.

03-26-03 Psa 103:13-18, 1Pe 5:10-11, Luk 2:40-50, 1Co 2:14, 1Jo 5:20-21 -- John Farley

1858 The Satanic Game Plan, part 34. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 9.

03-28-03 Mal 3:6; 1Pe 4:14; Mat 26:31-35,69-75; 1Sa 15:22; Job 8:5-6 -- John Farley

1859 The Satanic Game Plan, part 35. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 10.

03-30-03 Rom 7:18, Rev 3:16, Luk 15:28-32 Pro 3:7, Pro 12:20, Pro 14:16 -- John Farley

1860 The Satanic Game Plan, part 36. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 11.

04-02-03 Pro 14:22, 22:3; Ecc 5:1; Mat 12:35; 2Co 10:3-6 -- John Farley

1861 The Satanic Game Plan, part 37. The Doctrine of Guilt, part 12.

04-04-03 Phi 3:13-15, Isa 61:1, Tit 2:11-12, Psa 103:2, Lam 3:22-23, 2Co 5:21, Eph 2:1-10 -- John Farley

IA11-256 Current day events and how Satan is trying to distract the believer from fulfilling God's plan.

04-06-03 Rev 12:1-5, Rev 13:11-13; 2Ti 3:7-12, 2Ti 12:7-13, 2Ti 31:13-17; Luk 17:20-37

IA11-257 The kingdom of God is in your midst. The real sign for the Church-age believer.

04-09-03 Rev 12:3; Mat 12:38-40, Mat 11:28-29; Pro 3:33-34; Luk 18:9

IA11-258 Meet the great red dragon, part 1.

04-11-03 Rev 12:3, Gen 3:1-5, 1Jo 1:8-10, Zec 3:1-4, 1Jo 2:1

IA11-259 Why we don't celebrate Palm Sunday A Passover Special

04-13-03

IA11-260 Meet the great red dragon, part 2.

04-16-03 Psa 46:6-9, Psa 50:20-21, Psa 55:21-23, Psa 120:6-7, Psa 140:1-2; Rev 12:3; Dan 7:2-8; Rev 17:12-14; Mat 24:6

IA11-261 Meet the great red dragon, part 3. The elect and fallen angels.

04-18-03 Rev 12:3-4, Rev 15:4, Rev 16:5; Joh 4:17-18; Heb 2:2-4; Act 2:27, Act 13:35; Luk 9:26; Psa 89:5-8; Col 1:19-20

PHIL 4:3

IA11-262 Easter Sunday. Faith is greater than seeing.

04-20-03 Luk 24:1-15; Luk 1:1-4; Rev 1:17-18; Heb 11:1,6; Mat 1:18-21,24-25; Luk 23:44-46,53-55, Luk 24:1-9; 1Co 15:3-8; Luk 24:16-26

IA11-263 Meet the great red dragon, part 4. The perfect justice of God and the injustice of the world.

05-04-03 Rev 12:3-4; Dan 12:2; Rev 20:4-6,11-15, Rev 19:2; Psa 119:137; Deu 32:4; Ecc 3:17-18; 1Pe 3:14-16

- IA11-264      Meet the great red dragon, part 5. Leave the injustice of the world in the Lord's hands.  
05-07-03      Rev 12:4; 1Pe 3:14-16; Rom 12:17-21; Psa 58:10-11; Deu 29:29; Rev 15:4, Rev 16:5
- IA11-265      Meet the great red dragon, part 6. In the fall, the woman was deceived by Satan, but the  
man was not.  
05-09-03      Heb 2:2-4; Gen 3:5; 1Ti 2:14; Exo 26:1-6,31-35; Col 1:19-20; Phi 2:9-11; Heb  
2:9-10,15-16, Heb 11:6
- IA11-266      Mother's Day Special. The woman of virtue.  
05-11-03      Pro 31:10-31; 1Pe 3:1-6; Pro 12:4, Pro 5:15-18, Pro 19:15
- IA11-267      Meet the great red dragon, part 7. Without a harness, we are rebellious and out of  
control.  
05-14-03      Pro 11:2, Pro 16:18, Pro 29:23; Eph 4:31; Luk 12:49-50; Jam 3:14-16; Rev 12:4; Pro  
19:15-16; Rom 14:5-8
- IA11-268      Meet the great red dragon, part 8. A believer's energy must be harnessed and projected  
in the right direction.  
05-16-03      Jer 2:19, Jer 4:18; Deu 32:23-24; Lam 3:14-15; Gal 4:16; Pro 14:10, Pro 19:15-16; Rom  
14:5-8; Rev 12:4
- IA11-269      Meet the great red dragon, part 9. Satan threw off the harness and lost his greatness.  
05-18-03      Mat 4:1-11; 1Co 10:13; Jam 1:13-16; Rev 12:4,12; Joe 1:15, Joe 2:2; Job 25:1-5, Job  
38:1-7; Isa 14:11-15
- IA11-270      Meet the great red dragon, part 10. The fall of Satan, who became the first "exploding  
grenade."  
05-21-03      Rev 12:4; Isa 14:9-14; Rom 13:1-7; Rev 20:1-3, Rev 12:9, Rev 20:8,10
- IA11-271      Meet the great red dragon, part 11. The devil and his ace trump, religion.  
05-23-03      Rev 12:4; Joh 4:22-24; Col 2:16-23; Isa 14:14, Isa 29:13; 1Ti 4:1; Mat 7:15; 1Jo 4:1-6;  
2Co 11:13-15
- IA11-272      Memorial Day. Some gave all.  
05-25-03      Mat 24:6, Jos 5:13-6:2, Zec 14:3-4, Joh 15:13, 2Ti 2:1-4, Joh 16:32-33, Luk 9:57-62, 2Co  
4:8-12
- IA11-273      Meet the great red dragon, part 12. Satan will try anything to destroy the Jews.  
05-28-03      Rev 12:4; Deu 4:19, Deu 28:63-68; Jer 29:17-19; Zec 7:14; Rev 17:16-17; Jer 2:19; Mal  
3:17
- IA11-274      Meet the great red dragon, part 13. Passive arrogance creates the vacuum which  
attracts the persecution of active arrogance.  
05-30-03      Rev 12:4, Rev 17:16-17; Jer 2:19; Mal 3:17; Isa 62:3; Exo 1:10-16; Rev 12:5; Pro 25:27,  
Pro 26:12, Pro 27:2
- IA11-275      Meet the great red dragon, part 14. The death of the Lord Jesus Christ is the focal point  
of redemptive history.

- 06-01-03 Rev 12:4-5; Mar 10:43-45; Gen 3:21, Gen 4:4-5; Mat 26:14-19; Col 2:8-15; Joh 13:1-2,27; 1Co 11:23-32
- IA11-276 Meet the great red dragon, part 15. Inordinate competition against God's plan could never succeed and never will.
- 06-04-03 Rev 12:4-5; 2Co 10:12; Pro 25:27, Pro 26:12, Pro 27:2; Phi 2:3; Psa 140:1-3; Mat 3:7, Mat 12:34; Rev 20:1-3
- IA11-277 Meet the great red dragon, part 16. In the Millennial age, divine righteousness is expressed to mankind as never before.
- 06-06-03 Rev 12:5, Zec 14:16-19, Dan 7:24-27, Rev 20:7-10, Zec 14:1-9, Mar 13:24-27, Mat 24:36, Isa 13:9
- IA11-278 Our Lord's ascension and session, and His victory in the angelic conflict.
- 06-11-03 Rev 12:5; Act 1:6-9; Col 3:1; Rev 4:2; Psa 110:1; Act 2:29-36; Heb 1:13; Eph 1:18-23; 1Pe 3:22
- IA11-279 The ascension and session are vital concerning our Lord's victory in the angelic conflict.
- 06-13-03 Rev 12:5; Rev 4:2; Eph 1:20; Rom 8:29-34; Heb 8:1, Heb 10:12, Heb 12:2; 1Pe 3:18-22; Eph 3:1-10
- IA11-280 Dispensations--the divine outline and interpretation of human history.
- 06-15-03 Rev 12:5; Heb 13:8; Gen 2:16-17; Eph 1:9-11, Eph 3:1-9, Eph 1:3-6
- IA11-281 How the dispensations relate to the resurrection, ascension, and session.
- 06-18-03 Rev 12:5; Col 1:24-27; Act 2:32-35, Act 5:30-31; Heb 1:1-8,13; 1Pe 3:22; Heb 2:7; Eph 1:22
- IA11-282 The Lord Jesus Christ has inherited a new rank, title, and office, and so have we.
- 06-20-03 Heb 1:1-14, Heb 2:7; Col 2:14-15; Rev 2:1-3,12-13,17, Rev 3:1,8; Psa 91:11-12
- IA11-283 The Lord Jesus Christ sat down at the right hand of God, revealing that He was better than the angels in His humanity.
- 06-22-03 Heb 1:1-2:4; Mat 25:41; Rev 20:10; Deu 29:29; Isa 43:7, Isa 48:11; Rom 11:13-22; Act 7:38,53; Eph 3:10
- IA11-284 Out of the lowest, God shall bring the highest.
- 06-25-03 Heb 2:1-9; Rom 5:19; Amo 8:11-12; Mat 25:41; 2Pe 2:4; Joh 1:11; Rom 11:33; Isa 26:15, Isa 60:21; 2Co 5:7
- IA11-285 The first Adam lost his glory and honor; the last Adam built upon His glory and honor.
- 07-02-03 Heb 2:1-9, 1Co 15:45-49, Gen 1:28-30, Phi 2:9, Act 5:31; Gen 3:1-15, Luk 8:12, Mat 14:31, Rom 14:23
- IA11-286 At the Garden of Eden, the invisible spiritual war begins on the stage of human history.
- 07-06-03 Heb 2:7-9; Eph 2:6; Gen 2:8, Gen 3:1-12; Eze 28:12-14; Jer 4:23-26; Gen 2:16-17, Gen 5:1-3; Ecc 9:7; Deu 14:26
- IA11-287 No creature has or ever will successfully challenge the Creator.

- 07-09-03 Rev 12:5; Rev 22:2,14; Col 1:16; 1Co 6:19,20; Rom 6:12,13; Rom 12:1; 1Co 15:22,45;  
Gen 5:1,2
- IA11-288 There is an appointed time for everything, a time for every event under heaven.  
07-11-03 Rev 12:5-6, Ecc 3:1-9, Eph 5:14-18, Mat 24:6
- IA11-289 The word of God can often give antithetical advice or commands.  
07-13-03 Rev 12:6, Pro 26:4-5, Exo 3:21-22, Jos 7:24-25
- IA11-290 Even though you face the greatest possible historical disaster, there is a place of refuge.  
07-16-03 Rev 12:6; Zec 2:5; Joh 3:30; Dan 11:41; Luk 14:26-27,33; Mat 24:9-16; 2Ti 1:7; Phi  
4:11-13
- IA11-291 In the midst of danger, there is a place of refuge, inside the predesigned plan of God.  
07-18-03 Rev 12:6; Mat 24; Phi 4:10-13; Heb 4:12; 2Ti 3:1-5; Dan 12:4; 2Th 2:3-4; 2Pe 3:1-4; Jer  
6:16-17, Jer 42:13
- IA11-292 The world's darkest hour will abruptly end with the dawning of the brightest day when  
Jesus Christ returns.  
07-20-03 Rev 12:6; Mat 24; Rev 7:4; Luk 21:24; Dan 12:4; Gen 6:5,11-13; 1Jo 2:15-18; Rev  
13:14-18
- IA11-293 There comes a time when God's people need to learn the importance of separation.  
07-23-03 Rev 12:6; Mat 24; 2Co 6:14 - 2Co 7:1; Mat 10:34-38; Pro 13:20; 2Th 3:6,14; Rom 12:1-3;  
Heb 1:14
- IA11-294 Angels play an important role in the protection of God's people, especially in light of the  
invisible enemy we face.  
07-25-03 Rev 12:6; Heb 1:14; Mat 18:10; Luk 16:22; Mat 1:18-21, Mat 2:13,19-21, Mat 28:1-6
- IA11-295 We have a divine protection from the elect angels which sustains us and nourishes us  
throughout our lifetime.  
07-27-03 Rev 12:6; Heb 1:14; Psa 91:10-12; Isa 6:1-7; Rev 5:2; Rev 10:1; Gen 9:8-16; 2Ki 6:11-17;  
Rom 8:31-39
- IA11-296 There will be a crisis on earth during the Tribulational period, and Cherub angels will  
be in charge of "crisis evangelism."  
07-30-03 Rev 12:6; Eze 10:12, Eze 17:3; Gen 3:22-24; Eze 1:4-12, Eze 10:9-10; Rev 4:6-7, Rev  
7:1-2, Rev 14:6-10,17; Exo 14:13
- IA11-297 The man who controls great armies must first of all control himself.  
08-01-03 Rev 12:7-9; Dan 10:11-21, Dan 12:1; Psa 103:21; Jud 1:5-9; Pro 16:32
- IA11-298 Even people who deserve slandering are not to be slandered.  
08-03-03 Rev 12:7-9, Jud 1:9, Rom 1:21-32, Jam 3:1-10, Psa 140:1-3, Mat 12:34-37; 1Co 11:31-32;  
Pro 6:16-19
- IA11-299 Whether angels or human beings, God uses prepared people or prepared creatures.



- 08-06-03 Rev 12:7-8, Luk 14:25-35, Rom 10:2, Dan 10:13, Pro 24:1-6
- IA11-300 Satan wants the glory, but he doesn't have the ability, and that same spirit is manifested everywhere in the human race.
- 08-08-03 Rev 12:7-10; Isa 14:12-14; 2Co 11:3-4,14-15; Job 1:6-7; Mat 24:30; Isa 42:8, Isa 43:10, Isa 44:6; Gal 5:19-20
- IA11-301 No one wanted power more than Satan.
- 08-10-03 Rev 12:7-9; Gen 17:1, Gen 18:14; 1Ch 29:10-14; Rev 1:4-8, Rev 19:11-15; Dan 4:34-37; Eze 28:12-13
- IA11-302 Deception is the demonization of the soul and personality of the believer or unbeliever living in the cosmic system.
- 08-13-03 Rev 12:7-9; Col 2:1-4; 1Co 2:4-8, 1Co 3:18-20; 1Jo 2:15-16; 2Co 11:3; Eph 4:14; 2Pe 3:17
- IA11-303 The cosmic system is Satan's policy for the rulership of this world.
- 08-15-03 Rev 12:9, Eph 2:1-3, 1Ti 4:1-2, Rom 8:5-8, 1Jo 2:15-16, Eph 4:27, Jam 4:6-10, 1Pe 5:6-9
- IA11-304 Just as the predesigned plan of God manufactures spiritual winners, the cosmic system manufactures losers.
- 08-17-03 Rev 12:9; Eph 2:1-2; Ecc 1:2,9,14, Ecc 2:11,17, Ecc 3:9, Ecc 6:9, Ecc 7:26; 1Ti 4:1-2; Rom 16:17-18; 1Jo 1:8-9
- IA11-305 Religion is by far Satan's greatest trump card.
- 08-20-03 Rev 12:9, Rev 18:21-23; Rom 16:17-18; Heb 3:10; Gal 6:7; 1Jo 1:8; Isa 44:20
- IA11-306 The objective is to have money as your slave and perfect happiness as your master.
- 08-22-03 Rev 12:9, 1Ti 6:6-12, Heb 13:5, Ecc 5:10-11, Phi 4:11-13
- IA11-307 To be identified with a loser is to become a loser.
- 08-24-03 Rev 12:9; Joh 8:44; Jer 4:22, Jer 49:16; Rev 12:10; Mar 14:10-11; 1Co 7:27-40
- IA11-308 The importance of hearing, listening, and concentration, and what it accomplishes.
- 08-27-03 Rev 12:9-10; Joh 5:38-42,47, Joh 14:22-23, Joh 15:10; Phi 2:2; 1Jo 2:5, 1Jo 4:7; Deu 10:12; 1Jo 4:16-21
- IA11-309 The doctrine of the Second Coming.
- 08-29-03 Rev 12:10, Mat 1:19-25, Phi 2:5-11, Mat 24:37-44, Exo 14:14, Eze 38:14-23
- IA11-310 It pays to be a plugger, it pays to stay with truth, it pays to stay with Bible doctrine.
- 08-31-03 Rev 12:10, 19:6-8; Phi 2:14; Jam 4:13-14; Gal 5:22-23; Pro 24:15-18; Eze 38:14-23; Psa 110:1
- IA11-311 The Doctrine of the Second Advent, part 2.
- 09-03-03 Rev 12:10, 6:15-17; Eze 38:14-23; Mat 13:24-30, 47-50, 25:2,11-13; Eze 20:34-38; Rev 22:20
- IA11-312 The Doctrine of the Second Advent, part 3.

- 09-05-03 Gal 6:15-16, Rom 11:7-36, Col 2:16-23, Rom 7:18, Phi 2:12, Jud 1:14-15, Rev 22:20, Rev 12:10
- IA11-313 The single most important decision we can make on a day-to-day basis is our choice of mental attitude.  
09-07-03 Rev 12:10; 1Ti 2:11-14; 2Co 10:5-6; Pro 4:20-23, 23:26; Psa 92:12-15, 103:1-5; Job 5:17-22, 8:19-21
- IA11-314 In spite of man's efforts for peace, warfare will continue until the Millennium.  
09-10-03 Mat 24:6; Mar 13:7; Luk 21:9
- IA11-315 The Doctrine of Authority, part 1.  
09-14-03 Joh 8:32; Deu 11:27; 1Sa 15:22; Jer 11:4,7; Zec 6:15; Mat 8:27; Mar 4:41
- IA11-260 Meet the great red dragon, part 2.  
04-16-03 Psa 46:6-9, 50:20-21, 55:21-23, 120:6-7, 140:1-2; Rev 12:3; Dan 7:2-8; Rev 17:12-14; Mat 24:6
- IA11-316 The Doctrine of Authority, part 2.  
09-17-03 Rev 12:10, 1Co 11:3, Eph 5:22, Col 3:18, 1Co 11:7-12, Gen 2:18, Jer 31:22, Exo 20:12, Col 3:20
- IA11-317 The Doctrine of Authority, part 3.  
09-18-03 Eph 6:5-8; Col 3:22-25; Rom 13:1-8; Mat 8:27; Luk 8:25; Gal 5:7; Heb 13:17; Pro 11:2, 16:18, 23:29
- IA11-318 While the Devil persecutes believers on earth, he prosecutes believers in heaven.  
10-01-03 Rev 12:10; Deu 19:15-20; Jam 4:11,5:9; 1Jo 1:8-10; Job 1:6-12; Rev 20:7-8; Zec 3:2; Jud 1:20-25
- IA11-319 When Satan makes accusations against the people of God, their Defense Attorney is standing by.  
10-08-03 Rev 12:10, Zec 3:1-5, Psa 109:6, Jud 1:21-25, Psa 103:10-14, 1Jo 2:1-2, Tit 3:5, Rom 6:10
- IA11-320 The basis for victory over Satan during the time of his desperation.  
10-09-03 Rev 12:10-12, 20:10, 21:4; Isa 43:1-2, 53:10; Rom 3:25; Eph 1:7; Col 1:20; Psa 22:16; Lev 17:10-11
- IA11-321 The blood of the Lamb, part 1.  
10-10-03 Rev 12:11, Lev 17:10-12, Heb 9:1-4, Eph 1:7, Act 4: 12, Heb 10:1-14, Eph 2:1, Heb 9:13-14
- IA11-322 The blood of the Lamb, part 2.  
10-12-03 Rev 12:10-11, 1Pe 1:18-19, Rom 3:23-25, Col 1:19-20, Rom 5:8-9, Lev 17:10-14, Joh 19:28
- IA11-323 The blood of the Lamb, part 3.

- 10-15-03 Rev 12:11; Eph 1:7; Heb 9:12-14; Rev 1:5; Heb 13:12; Gen 3:21, 4:4, 8:20, 22:13; Lev 1:1-9; 1Pe 3:18
- IA11-324 The blood of the Lamb, part 4.  
10-16-03 Lev 1:1-10,14, 16:7-16,21-22; Joh 14:26; Joh 1:29;Act 4:12; Tit 2:11; Eph 5:2; Heb 10:1-14
- IA11-325 The blood of the Lamb, part 5.  
10-17-03 Mic 3:11; Lev 1:14-17; 2Co 8:9; 1Jo 1:7, 5:4-8; Joh 10:17-18, 19:28-37; Deu 21:22-23; Psa 34:20
- IA11-326 The blood of the Lamb, part 6.  
10-19-03 Joh 19:28; Psa 69:21; Joh 15:20; Jam 1:2-4; Joh 7:37, 19:29-37; Deu 21:22-23
- IA11-327 The first and second victories over Satan in the Tribulation.  
10-22-03 Rev 12:11; Col 1:9-13; Eph 4:14,17-19; 2Ti 3:16, 4:2
- IA11-328 Integrity is the spiritual strength to use the shield of faith, and it comes from inculcation of Bible doctrine.  
10-23-03 Rev 12:11; Heb 1:23-27; Jam 1:22-25; Eph 4:29-5:2; Pro 23:7; Gal 6:3; Rom 12:2-3; Phi 2:5, 3:15
- IA11-329 Doctrine has an invitation.  
10-24-03 Rev 12:11; 2Ch 14:7; Pro 8:1-36; Heb 5:14, Pro 14:15, 24:5
- IA11-330 The challenge during times of prosperity is to simply stick with the perception, metabolization, and application of doctrine.  
10-26-03 Rev 12:9-11, Deu 6:10-12, Pro 8:1-36, Heb 11:6, 2Ti 3:1-8
- IA11-331 The doctrine of the strategical and the tactical winners, part 1. Every Christian is a strategical winner.  
10-29-03 Rev 12:11; Psa 23:4; 1Co 15:55; Heb 2:14-15; 1Jo5:4-5; Rev 2:7,11,17,26, 3:5,12,21, 21:7; 1Ti 3:1-8
- IA11-332 The doctrine of the strategical and the tactical winners, part 2. The chief witness in history is Jesus Christ in hypostatic union.  
10-30-03 Rev 12:11; 1Jo 5:4-5; Col 2:14-15; Rev 1:4-5, 3:14; 2Ti 3:1-7
- IA11-333 The doctrine of the strategical and the tactical winners, part 3. Rank has its privileges.  
10-31-03 Rev 12:11, Eph 2:8-10, Mar 10:29-30, Eph 4:11-16, Phi 3:8-16
- IA11-334 Dying Grace: Every man dies, but not every man really lives.  
11-02-03 Rev 12:11; Eph 3:14-20; Psa 68:20, 116:15; Isa 57:1; Rev 21:4; 2Co 5:8; Phi 1:20-21; 2Ti 4:1-13
- IA11-335 The celebration in heaven.  
11-05-03 Rev 12:9-17, 1Co 15:20-24, 2Co 5:1-10, Oba 1:12; Pro 24:17-18, Rev 6:9-10, Rom 12:14-21

- IA11-336 The sea is the most powerful set of gates ever used for a prison.  
11-06-03 Rev 12:12, 20:11-15, 21:1; 2Pe 2:4; Jud 1:6; Act 23:6-9; Gen 1:2; Mat 8:28-32; Rev 20:13; Rom 3:3-4
- IA11-337 Anger turned a genius into an idiot.  
11-07-03 Rev 12:12, Eph 4:30-31, Ecc 7:9, Amo 1:11, Heb 12:15, Pro 26:20-28, Rom 3:3-4, Luk 14:18
- IA11-338 If believers would only learn to lay their hand on their own mouth.  
11-09-03 Rev 12:12-13,15,17; Job 40:1-8; Isa 48:10-11; Rom 5:3; Psa 119:113; 2Co 12:15; Rom 3:3-4; Luk 14:18
- IA11-339 We have two choices when we fail.  
11-12-03 Isa 17:47; Act 28:4-6; Joh 2:23-25; Rev 12:12; Psa 27:1,103:3-12,15,16
- IA11-340 Satan entered into operation blame game.  
11-13-03 Rev 12:12-13,15,17; Psa 37:23-23, 103:2; Job 5:22; Mar 8:31, 12:10; 1Sa 8:4-7; Rom 12:2-8
- IA11-341 Rejection gives the believer the opportunity for self-examination and the re-evaluation of his perspective.  
11-14-03 Rev 12:13; Jam 4:7; 1Pe 5:9; 1Sa 8:4-7; Rom 12:1-8; Deu 32:39; Jer 17:5-9, 30:12-15; Psa 27:10
- IA11-342 The fool ignores the fact that the time may be short.  
11-16-03 Rev 12:12-13; Luk 12:13-21; Pro 10:20-21, 12:18,18:21; Jam 4:13-14; Mat 6:19-21; Luk 9:23-25
- IA11-343 Wake up before it's too late.  
11-19-03 Rev 12:13; Psa 119:50,92,107,143; Mal 3:2; Act 5:41-42, 14:21-22; 2Co 4:16-18; Rom 12:14-21
- IA11-344 If your daily priorities include doctrine first, you will be ready when you go into the storm of pressure and adversity.  
11-20-03 Rev 12:13, Ecc 9:9-10, Isa 61:3, Col 3:17, Zec 4:10, Mat 25:21, Luk 16:10-12, 2Pe 3:10-14, Rev 3:1-3
- IA11-345 Arrogant, unhappy people become persecutors.  
11-21-03 Rev 12:13; Joh 15:18-21; 1Pe 2:18-19, 3:14-16; Rom 12:14-21; Eph 3:1-10; Joh 8:32,36; Gal 5:1,13
- IA11-346 There is a legitimate amount of persecution that a believer must go through to glorify God in the midst of the devil's world.  
11-23-03 Rev 12:13; Phi 1:29; Act 14:19-22; Joh 15:17-16:4, 17:14-16; Rom 1:26-28; 1Co 6:9-10; Eph 3:1-10,13
- IA11-347 Thanksgiving Special, 2003.

- 11-26-03 Col 3:15-17, Isa 40:22, Psa 76:10, Gen 50:20, Joh 1:12-13, Isa 46:8
- IA11-348 You will be persecuted when you speak the truth and live the truth.  
11-30-03 Rev 12:13; Luk 16:10-15; Eph 2:11-16, 3:1-10; Joh 15:18-16:4; 1Pe 4:3-5
- IA11-349 To the extent that you entertain any form of arrogance in your life, you can only learn truth the hard way.  
12-03-03 Rev 12:9-13, 19:11-16; Zec 14:1-4; Rev 20:1-3, 7-10; Rom 10:9-10; Gen 15:6; Rom 9:30-32
- IA11-350 In every dispensation, God's policy of grace always excludes human self-righteousness and any form of human good.  
12-04-03 Rev 12:13; Mat 12:39-41, 16:4; Joh 2:19; Mat 12:38-40; Rom 9:3--10:10; Joh 6:27-29
- IA11-351 The ultimate in human arrogance is ignorance of the righteousness of God and seeking to establish your own righteousness.  
12-10-03 Rev 12:13; Rom 10:1-4,9-10; Joh 6:27-29; Mat 5:17-18; Mal 3:8-11; Rom 3:20,28; Gal 3:24
- IA11-352 The imputation of divine righteousness at the moment of salvation replaces any system of human self-righteousness.  
12-11-03 Joh 1:11; Isa 52:2-3; Rom 10:1-5; Mal 3:8-11; Rom 3:19-20,28, 7:4-8:4; Gal 3:10-14
- IA11-353 Salvation is not unavailable or unattainable, because you do not have to depend on your own righteousness.  
12-12-03 Rom 10:1-5; Gal 2:19-3:3; Rom 3:19-20, 7:4-8:4; Gal 3:10-13; Deu 30:10-14; Joh 3:31
- IA11-354 No lifestyle, including semi-perfection in morality, can open the gates of heaven for eternal life nor provide happiness in life.  
12-14-03 Rev 12:13; Mat 15:1-3,7-9; Col 2:8, Deu 6:1-9; Mat 18:20; Rom 9:30-10:8; Deu 30:10-14
- IA11-355 Paul uses the phraseology of Moses to explain to the Jews how they could be saved in the Church-age.  
12-17-03 Rom 10:1-9, Amo 9:2, Deu 30:10-14, Heb 6:1-6
- IA11-356 Jesus Christ completed salvation on the Cross and does not have to come down from heaven again to provide salvation.  
12-18-03 Rom 10:6-10, Amo 9:2, Deu 30:14, 2Co 11:3-4, Mat 7:21-23
- IA11-357 God is full of surprises!  
12-19-03 Mat 17:20; 2Pe 3:7-8; Mat 19:23-26; Jos 6:1-5,21; Luk 1:37; 1Ki 17:10-16; Mal 4:1-6; Mat 11:11-14
- IA11-358 God loves to do things that we have absolutely no power to do, and that's the way He has planned our life.  
12-21-03 Mat 19:26, Luk 1:37, Mal 4:1-6, Luk 1:5-35
- IA11-359 The cost of Christmas.

- 12-24-03 2Co 8:1-5; 1Ch 21:19-24, 29:2-17; Luk 1:30-35; 1Ti 6:6-10; Mat 1:18-21, 2:13-18; Rev 22:17; Joh 3:16
- IA11-360 Christmas Special, part 4: When darkness surrounds, God's promises keep us hoping.  
12-28-03 Gen 15:12; Mal 3:7-8,13,16, 4:2-6; Luk 1:18-19, 57-80
- IA11-361 Degeneracy and historical disaster in a nation.  
12-31-03 Rev 12:13; Dan 12:4; Isa 40:31; Lam 3:21-28; 2Co 11:13-15; 2Ti 3:1-4; Deu 4:19-27,  
28:63-68

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 10

The Satanic Game Plan

Ephesians 6:7-12

01/12/03

Satan has organized a tremendous demon army to hinder Church-age believers from fulfilling the predesigned plan of God. The kingdom of darkness has fallen angels that are organized to resist and oppose positive believers, Eph 6:12-17; Job 1:6, 2:1-3. 1Pe 5:8 says, *"Be of sober spirit [attain spiritual self-esteem], be on the alert. Your adversary, the devil, prowls about like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour."*

Satan has two major objectives:

1. Blind the minds of unbelievers so they will not accept Christ, 2Co 4:4, *"In whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving so that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ."*
  2. If they do believe in Christ, hinder their function and execution of the predesigned plan of God, distract them in every way possible, and prevent them from keeping Bible doctrine as their #1 priority.
- Satan and his angels are the enemy of unbelievers, 2Co 4:3-4, 2Th 2:7-10, Col 2:8.  
*Luk 8:12 "And those beside the road are those who have heard; then the devil comes and takes away the word from their heart, so that they may not believe and be saved."*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of the Church-age believer, 2Co 2:11, *"So that no advantage would be taken of us by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his schemes."*  
*Jam 4:7 Submit therefore to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of the church, Rev 2:8-10,12-13.  
*Eph 6:12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places.*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of Bible doctrine, Mat 13:19,39, *"When anyone hears the word of the kingdom and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown in his heart. This is the one on whom seed was sown beside the road."*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of Israel, Rev 12:13-15, *"And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male child. And the two wings of the great eagle were given to the woman, in order that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she was nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent. And the serpent poured water like a river out of his mouth after the woman, so that he might cause her to be swept away with the flood."*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of the dispensation of the hypostatic union, Rev 12:4, *"And his tail swept away a third of the stars of heaven, and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour her child."*
  - Satan and his angels are the enemy of nations, Rev 12:9, 20:3,8.  
*Rev 12:9 And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.*

Satan and his angels are the chief antagonists of the extension of the angelic conflict into human history, Heb 1-2, 1 Jo 4:4, *"Greater is He who is in you [omnipotence of the Father indwelling us and the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit in the predesigned plan of God] than he who is in the world [Satan and his cosmic system]."*

The Word of God gives us priceless intelligence about the plan of our enemy, and as we have seen, every good plan has three major elements:

1. An objective
2. A strategy
3. Tactics

The objective is the desired result; it is the purpose for which the effort is being expended, the sought-after prize.

The strategy is the single manner in which you create an advantage for yourself in achieving the objective.

Tactics are the set of things you do to exploit the advantage created by the chosen strategy for the purpose of attaining the objective.

### God's Game Plan

Again, Satan and his angels, are the antagonists of the historic angelic conflict, and throughout human history, we can see his progressive attacks against the following:

- Unbelievers
- Nations
- Israel
- The Hypostatic Union
- Bible doctrine
- Church-age believers
- The Church

God's game plan is as follows:

1. His objective is to win the angelic conflict by bringing "many sons to glory" (Heb 2:10).
2. His strategy is of course the Cross of Jesus Christ
3. His tactics include the believer living inside of predesigned plan of God, utilizing the ten problem-solving devices, advancing through the stages of spiritual growth and maintaining Bible doctrine as his #1 Priority.

Satan's objective is to take God's place, to be the king over heaven and earth.

*Isa 14:13-14 But you said in your heart, "I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God, and I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the north. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High."*

Satan violates the rule of strategy because he actually uses two strategies, to promote worship of self and to discredit God.

Satan was smart enough to know that he could not oppose God "man-to-man." Instead, he turned his war plans toward God's creatures. Satan's strategy and war plans move in opposition to every one of God's designs for mankind. Satan's kingdom lines up as the enemy of mankind at *every point* of God's gracious dealings.

Satan has invented two systems to enslave man, and they go hand-in-hand with his two strategies:

1. In the first system, Cosmic 1, man is preoccupied with himself.
2. In the second system, Cosmic 2, man is antagonistic toward God and His plan.

Both Cosmic 1 and Cosmic 2 are prisons, and if you stray from God's predesigned plan for very long, you will end up in one of them. The arrogance complex (Cosmic 1) enslaves man to his own bad decisions; the hatred complex (Cosmic 2) enslaves man to Satan.

The cosmic system continually threatens your spiritual momentum. Its tentacles seek out the believer's personal weaknesses and blind spots, so for your own happiness, avoid the cosmic system. It is a system that is designed to *wear you out*.



*Dan 7:25 He will speak out against the Most High and wear down the saints of the Highest One, and he will intend to make alterations in times and in law; and they will be given into his hand for a time, times, and half a time.*

There are many Satanic schemes and attacks made toward believers, 2 Cor 2:11, "So that no advantage would be taken of us by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his schemes." Even born-again believers can fall prey to Satan's schemes and become his slaves, 2Ti 2:25-26, "And they may come to their senses and escape from the snare of the devil, having been held captive by him to do his will."

Satan constantly accuses believers; in Rev 12:10, he is called "the accuser of the brethren." Satan accuses the believer day and night before the throne of God. The believer, though accused, stands perfectly righteous before God because of the imputed righteousness of Christ that is received at the moment of salvation. The kingdom of darkness loves to make accusations against God's people, to condemn them and plague them with guilt.

In response to satanic attack, the Church-age believer must take up the shield of faith, Eph 6:16.

*Eph 6:16 In addition to all [the armor of God], taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming missiles of the evil one.*

Our "rallying cry" is found in 1Jo 4:4, "Greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world."

One of Satan's favorite tactics is to accuse God's people, and we see him in action against Joshua in Zec 3:1-4.

*Zec 3:1-4 Then he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse him. And the LORD said to Satan, "The LORD rebuke you, Satan! Indeed, the LORD who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?" [Joshua is a redeemed, born-again believer, who is eternally secure.] Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments and standing before the angel. And He spoke and said to those who were standing before him saying, "Remove the filthy garments from him." Again He said to him, "See, I have taken your iniquity away from you and will clothe you with festal robes."*

The sins and failures Satan brings up are true; however, our sins have been taken away, we have been clothed with the robes of the Lord Jesus Christ (His perfect righteousness), and He continually intercedes on our behalf before the throne of God, Heb 7:25, Rom 8:34.

*Rom 8:34 Who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is He who died, yes, rather who was raised, who is at the right hand of God, who also intercedes for us.*

*1Jo 2:1-2 My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world.*

In the face of this satanic attack, the man after God's own heart never quits. He guts it out and applies the appropriate problem-solving devices.

- The Christian soldier uses the shield of the faith-rest drill.

*Psa 103:12 As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.*

- The Christian soldier uses the sword of doctrinal orientation.

*Rom 8:1 There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.*

- The Christian soldier uses the helmet of occupation with the Person of Christ.

*Heb 7:23-25 And the former priests, on the one hand, existed in greater numbers, because they were prevented by death from continuing, but He, on the other hand, because He abides forever, holds His priesthood permanently. Hence, also, He is able to save forever*

*those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.*

The Lord keeps on interceding for us so that we will be *completely delivered* from the attacks and deadliness of the old sin nature, the world, and the kingdom of darkness.

The satanic hope follows this pattern: Accusation → Shame → Guilt → Doubt concerning the believer's position in Christ → Stress in the soul → Subjectivity → Residence in Cosmic 1 → Becoming a prisoner to Satan and his system.

Fortunately for us, God in His grace has provided a problem-solving device, a counteraction, for every one of Satan's tactics, strategies, and objectives. Using our current example of the tactic of satanic accusations, these are God's solutions:

Satan's Attack

Tactic: Accuse (fiery darts)

Strategy: Human viewpoint

Objective: Prevent the glorification  
of the Lord Jesus Christ

God's Solution

P.S.D. #3, The faith-rest drill

P.S.D. #5, Doctrinal orientation

P.S.D. #10, Occupation with the  
person of Christ

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 11

The Faith Rest Drill

Hebrews 7:23-25

01/19/03

Ephesians 6:12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places.

*1Jo 4:4 Greater is He who is in you [the omnipotence of the Father indwelling us and the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit in the predesigned plan of God] than he who is in the world [Satan and his cosmic system].*

As we have seen in our review of Satan's game plan, any good plan has three major elements:

1. An objective.
2. A strategy.
3. Tactics.

God also has a game plan

1. Objective: Win the angelic conflict by bringing many sons to glory.
2. Strategy: The Cross of Jesus Christ.
3. Tactics: The predesigned plan of God for the Church-age, including 10 problem-solving devices, 4 spiritual mechanics, 3 spiritual skills, 2 power options, and 1 top priority, Bible doctrine.

Satan's objective is to *take God's place*. He wants to be the king over heaven and earth. He wants to be "*numero uno*." His strategy is two-fold:

1. Promote worship of self.
2. Discredit God.

*Dan 7:25 He will speak out against the Most High and wear down the saints of the Highest One, and he will intend to make alterations in times and in law; and they will be given into his hand for a time, times, and half a time.*

Satan continually schemes against and attacks believers.

*2Co 2:11 So that no advantage would be taken of us by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his schemes.*

Satan's tactical objective is prevent the believer from bringing glory to God in the angelic conflict and to prevent Jesus Christ from being glorified in the believer's life. His tactical strategy against the Church-age believer is to replace Bible doctrine circulating in the soul with human viewpoint thinking among positive believers.

Satan accuses believers; in Rev 12:10 he is called "the accuser of the brethren." Satan accuses the believer *day and night* before the throne of God. However, the believer, though accused, stands perfectly righteous before God because of the imputed righteousness of Christ, which he received at the moment of salvation. The sins that Satan mentions are real; he knows that God is omniscient so there is no point in wasting His time by presenting lies. In the face of this attack, the man and woman after God's own heart never quit. Instead they gut it out by applying the appropriate problem-solving devices.

They use the shield of the faith-rest drill as Christian soldiers.

*Psa 103:12 As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.*

As Christian soldiers they use the sword of doctrinal orientation.

*Rom 8:1 Therefore there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.*

As Christian soldiers they use the helmet of occupation with the Person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Heb 7:25 He is able to save forever those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.*

Our Lord keeps on interceding for us so that we will be completely delivered from the attacks and deadliness of the old sin nature, the world, and the kingdom of darkness.

We also noted the importance of reviewing over and over again the 10 problem-solving devices. Satan's plan is to accuse (with his fiery darts) through his strategy, which is human viewpoint thinking. The objective, as always, is to prevent the Lord Jesus Christ from being glorified. Those accusations can lead to shame, guilt, stress in soul and eventually to life in Cosmic 1. However God has provided weapons to knock out all the tactics, the strategies, and the objectives of the satanic plan. The kingdom of darkness expects to see your soul "blow up"; instead, the tactic backfires in their face.

*2Co 10:4 For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but divinely powerful for the destruction of fortresses.*

### The Faith-Rest Technique

We will all face disasters, tragedies, and scares in our lives. We need simple, strong medicine to fight the fear. God provides a step-by-step technique for beating fear and getting back to thinking doctrine.

- Establish fellowship with God (the filling of the Holy Spirit) through Biblical confession of sin.
- Recover a relaxed mental attitude by claiming promises from the Word.
- Call up divine viewpoint thinking; concentrate on pertinent doctrines related to the issue at hand.
- Take control of the situation as you reach doctrinal conclusions.

*2Co 12:10 Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then I am strong.*

Human viewpoint: "When I am weak, then I am stuck!"

Divine viewpoint: "When I am weak, then I am strong!"

*Eph 6:16 In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.*

The large Roman body-shield measured about 4 feet high by 2 1/2 feet wide. It was usually constructed of alternating layers of bronze and ox hide (leather). Rome's enemies often used arrows dipped in pitch, which would be set aflame and fired at the Roman soldiers. Their hope was that the arrow would pierce the target, and the flaming pitch would spread rapidly, seriously injuring many soldiers. The metal could deflect flaming arrows, and the leather was treated to extinguish the burning pitch. The faith-rest drill, from beginning to end, prevents the work of Satan from becoming fruitful in our lives. The shield of faith can only be carried by the believer who has knowledge and spiritual strength gained from having his faith tested. Each day we all have small problems designed to train us for the day when we are going to have a large problem!

Our discipline in handling the daily difficulties of life teaches us how to overcome distractions and irritations by using the shield of faith. If you are facing a hopeless situation in your life, a situation where you've tried everything, and nothing works, and it is ruining your peace of mind, then God would like you to know that He has great plans for you, and He is up to something bigger than your problem. What He really wants you to learn is how to please Him, and that is by *faith*, Heb 11:6.

Faith is based on knowledge; it is not an emotion, and it is not automatic. Faith is a non-meritorious system of perception based on confidence in the authority and veracity of another. Faith is a decision to place your trust and confidence in the character and nature of another to come through for you; as a believer we put that faith that knowledge based on Bible doctrine, in the Lord Jesus Christ. Faith can also mean a system of doctrine or a creed perceived by faith, that which is believed.

*Mat 17:20 And He said to them, "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible to you."*

You already trusted Him to take care of the biggest problem—to change your nature and thereby your destiny. Now, don't you believe He can change whatever else needs changing in your life?

The faith-rest drill is a versatile technique for overcoming any difficulty, problem, or disaster in life. by *faith* the believer applies doctrine logically while *resting* in God's promises. One of the most gracious decisions God makes in His sovereignty is to allow tragedies and heartbreaks in our lives so that we will learn to lean on Him rather than on our own strength and resources. When you find yourself in these situations, you have two options:

1. Doubt God's Word, and be totally miserable.
2. Believe God's Word and enter into His rest.

God has given us promises and doctrines in the Bible. It's our job to:

1. Learn them.
2. Believe them.
3. Use them to solve our problems.

*Psa 27:5 For in the day of trouble He will conceal me in His tabernacle [promises]; In the secret place of His tent [doctrine] He will hide me; He will lift me up on a rock [occupation with Christ].*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 12

Isaiah 28:16

01/26/03

In our doctrine of The Satanic Game Plan against Church-age believers, we have begun studying the faith-rest drill. As we have seen, Satan's game plan for Church-age believers begins with his *tactics*, such as the fiery darts, the accusations he brings against God's people. His *strategy* is in human viewpoint thinking. The *objective* is to prevent the Lord Jesus Christ from being glorified.

*2Co 10:4 For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but divinely powerful for the destruction of fortresses.*

To successfully resist the satanic attacks, the believer must know and use the ten *problem-solving devices*:

1. Rebound
2. The Filling of the Spirit
3. The Faith-Rest Drill
4. Grace Orientation
5. Doctrinal Orientation
6. A Personal Sense of Destiny
7. Personal Love for God the Father
8. Impersonal Unconditional Love for all Mankind
9. Sharing the Happiness of God
10. Occupation with the Lord Jesus Christ

*Eph 6:16 In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.*

The large body shield that Paul referenced here measured about 4 feet high by 2<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> feet wide. It was usually constructed of alternating layers of bronze and oxhide. Rome's enemies used arrows dipped in pitch which would be set aflame and fired at the Roman soldiers. The Roman shield, when utilized correctly by a unit of soldiers, repelled the fiery arrows so they fell harmlessly to the ground.

The analogy here is that the faith-rest drill, from beginning to end, prevents the work of Satan from causing damage in our lives. The shield of faith can only be carried by the believer who has knowledge and the spiritual strength gained from having his faith tested. Our discipline in handling the daily difficulties of life teaches us how to overcome major problems by using the shield of faith. When we are facing a hopeless situation in our life, one where we have tried everything and nothing works, we must remember that God is up to something bigger than our problem—He desires for us to learn how to please Him, and that is through faith, Heb 11:6.

Faith is not an emotion, faith is not blind, and faith is not automatic. Faith is based on knowledge.

*Heb 11:1 Now faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the conviction of things not seen.*

*Faith* is one of three ways we acquire knowledge (*rationalism* is learning through reason; *empiricism* is learning through experience and one's senses). Faith is a *non-meritorious* system of perception based on confidence in the authority and veracity of another. It is defined as learning by accepting the authority of the source. Faith also means a system of doctrine or a creed perceived by faith, i.e., that which is believed. Faith is a decision to place your trust and confidence in the character and nature of another to come through for you.

If you have faith the size of a mountain and your faith is in a swindler, your faith is worthless; if your faith is in One who is perfect, a mustard seed of faith is plenty.

*Mat 17:20 And He said to them, "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move, and nothing will be impossible to you."*

In salvation, our Lord Jesus Christ is the object of our faith; He has all the merit. In the spiritual life, Bible doctrine is the object of faith.

*Rom 10:17 So faith comes from hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ.*

As a believer you have already trusted Him to take care of the most serious problem you ever had (spiritual death), to change your nature and thereby your destiny, so can you also trust Him to change whatever else needs changing in your life?

*Rom 8:15 For you have not received a spirit of slavery leading to fear again, but you have received a spirit of adoption as sons by which we cry out, "Abba! Father!"*

The faith-rest drill is a versatile technique for overcoming *any* difficulty, problem, or disaster in life. By *faith* the believer applies doctrine logically while *resting* in God's promises. The reactions of fear, worry, anxiety, and panic do not resolve any life situation. They only disorient us to reality. Perhaps the most potent enemy is *fear* because fear shuts down our thinking. Bravery means thinking under pressure. Satan has formulated special tactics to induce fear in believers. However, God has provided a place of inner peace, happiness, stability, and power within the grasp of every Christian, *in the midst* of difficult circumstances and problems. In the Bible, this place of peace is often called "rest." It is a moment-by-moment rest, and God intends for every believer to trust Him continuously. One of the most gracious decisions God makes in our lives is to allow tragedies and heartbreaks so that we will learn to lean on Him rather than on our own strength and resources. When you find yourself in these situations, you have two options:

- Doubt God's Word and be totally miserable.
- Believe God's Word and enter into His rest.

God has given us promises and doctrines in His Word. We are to learn them, believe them, and use them to solve our problems.

*Psa 27:5 For in the day of trouble He will conceal me in His tabernacle [promises]; in the secret place of His tent [doctrine] He will hide me; He will lift me up on a rock [occupation with Christ].*

We are given many promises for eternity, such as:

- We are promised a resurrection body, Phi 3:21.
- We are promised no more tears, sorrow, or pain, Rev 21:4.
- We will be face-to-face with the Lord, 2Co 5:8.

When you rest in God's promises, you can be stable and content even under the worst pressure and adversity. You can thank God for the difficulty, knowing He permits it for your benefit.

*Psa 119:71 It is good for me that I was afflicted, that I may learn Your statutes.*

The result of living in faith-rest in spite of the pressures and temptations is an exchange of human power for divine omnipotence. The Lord will either deliver you from the situation, or, more likely, He will give you the strength and contentment to *endure* the situation.

There are at least nine different Hebrew words for "faith" in the Old Testament, revealing how important this word was to the Jewish people. One of these is "*aman*," used in Isa 28:16.

*Isa 28:16 Therefore thus says the Lord GOD, "Behold, I am laying in Zion a stone, a tested stone, a costly cornerstone for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes in it will not be disturbed."*

This word means to believe, be supported, or use another as a crutch; the root meaning is a foundation on which something is built, a pillar, or a supporter of the door.

In Rev 3:14, the Apostle John uses the Greek equivalent of "*aman*" to describe the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Rev 3:14 "And to the angel of the church in Laodicea write: The Amen, the faithful and true Witness, the Beginning of the creation of God, says this..."*

Our Lord is faithful and true; He is our rock and our foundation.

In Mat 8:5-10, this same word appears again when Jesus is amazed by the faith of the Roman centurion. This great man of doctrine understood perfectly well that faith means confidence in the authority of another.

*Mat 8:5-10 And when He had entered Capernaum, a centurion came to Him, entreating Him, and saying, "Lord, my servant is lying paralyzed at home, suffering great pain." And He said to him, "I will come and heal him." But the centurion answered and said, "Lord, I am not worthy for You to come under my roof, but just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I, too, am a man under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to this one, 'Go!' and he goes, and to another, 'Come!' and he comes, and to my slave, 'Do this!' and he does it." Now when Jesus heard this, He marveled, and said to those who were following, "Truly [Amen] I say to you, I have not found such great faith with anyone in Israel."*

In Gen 41:14, Joseph has been wrongfully imprisoned for years, yet when the Pharaoh finally calls to have him released, his mental attitude is totally relaxed.

*Gen 41:14 Then Pharaoh sent and called for Joseph, and they hurriedly brought him out of the dungeon; and when he had shaved himself and changed his clothes, he came to Pharaoh.*

Joseph is in no rush—he knew God would come through for him. He is a great example of the application of the faith-rest drill and understanding one's personal sense of destiny.

The greatest example of all time of faith-rest is of course the humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ, as we can clearly see in Mar 4:35-41.

*Mar 4:35-41 And on that day, when evening had come, He said to them, "Let us go over to the other side." And leaving the multitude, they took Him along with them, just as He was, in the boat; and other boats were with Him. And there arose a fierce gale of wind, and the waves were breaking over the boat so much that the boat was already filling up. And He Himself was in the stern, asleep on the cushion; and they awoke Him and said to Him, "Teacher, do You not care that we are perishing?" And being aroused, He rebuked the wind and said to the sea, "Hush, be still." And the wind died down and it became perfectly calm. And He said to them, "Why are you so timid? How is it that you have no faith?" And they became very much afraid and said to one another, "Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey Him?"*

The divine power behind the faith-rest drill enables us to sleep well in the middle of the worst storms. With confidence restored, you can assess the situation and make decisions from a position of strength. You may take appropriate actions based on sound judgment and common sense. If the problem is hopeless, and you are helpless, now it is time to trust the Lord to come through for you. Testing is a field-training exercise in the angelic conflict. For every time you apply doctrine in your soul to a problem, there is a decoration for you in heaven.

The faith-rest drill was designed by God to bring stability to the life of believers who live in the devil's world during the angelic conflict. A good question to ask ourselves is "If not God, what?" What will you rest in? As Peter said in Joh 6:68, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have words of eternal life." There is nothing else worth putting our trust in besides our Lord and His Word. The world stage is littered with the corpses of failed dreams and false hopes, and no one learned this better than King Solomon, who learned it the hard way over many years until he finally reached the doctrinal conclusion:



*Ecc 1:14 I have seen all the works, which have been done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity and striving after wind.*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 13

Slamming Our Troubles on the Lord

Deu 30:11-19

02/02/03

*We have been noting the Satanic Game Plan and the weapons given to the Christian Soldier to combat that plan, as in Eph 6:16, "In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one."*

One of the many Hebrew words for faith is "*aman*," which is a verb meaning to *believe, support, or use someone as a crutch*. The root meaning is a foundation on which something is built, a foster father; a pillar, a supporter of the door.

We have seen that faith is a decision to place your trust and confidence in the character and nature of another to come through for you.

*Ecc 1:14 I have seen all the works which have been done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity and striving after wind.*

*Joh 6:68 Simon Peter answered Him, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have words of eternal life."*

As a believer, you have already trusted Him to take care of the worst problem you ever had, and to give you a new nature and forever change your destiny. Therefore, you should be able to trust in Him to change whatever else needs changing in your life. The faith-rest drill is a versatile technique for overcoming any difficulty, problem, or disaster in life. By *faith* the believer applies doctrine logically while *resting* in God's promises.

The reactions of fear, worry, anxiety, and panic do not resolve any situation in life; they only disorient people to reality. Perhaps the most potent enemy is fear because fear shuts down our thinking. Satan has formulated special tactics for the specific purpose of inducing fear in believers. However, God has intended for every believer to trust Him and to rest in that trust. One of the most gracious decisions God makes is to allow tragedies and heartbreaks in our lives so that we will learn to lean on Him rather than on our own strength and resources. When we are confronted with these situations, there are only two options—we can either doubt God's Word and be totally miserable, or believe God's Word and enter into His rest.

The place of peace is often called "rest" in the Word of God. It is a moment-by-moment rest, which Jacob discovered, as seen in Heb 11:21.

*Heb 11:20-21 By faith Jacob, as he was dying, blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and worshiped, leaning on the top of his staff.*

The staff symbolizes divine protection, and by this time Jacob had learned to trust in God's power to deliver him.

God has given us promises and doctrines in the Bible. It's our job to learn them, believe them and use them to solve our problems, Psa 27:5, "*For in the day of trouble He will conceal me in His tabernacle [promises]; in the secret place of His tent [doctrine] He will hide me; He will lift me up on a rock [occupation with Christ].*" God has given us promises for eternity, for the *resurrection body* (Phi 3:21), *no more sorrow, tears, pain, or death* (Rev 21:4), and being *absent from the body and face-to-face with the Lord* at physical death (2Co 5:8).

When you rest in God's promises, you can be stable and content even under the worst pressure and adversity. You can thank God for the difficulty, knowing He permits it for your benefit.

*Psa 119:71 It is good for me that I was afflicted, that I may learn Your statutes.*

The second Hebrew word for faith that we have studied is "*batach*," which is a wrestling term. It means to trust in the sense of slamming your troubles on God; this word has a very clear faith-rest

connotation—to have confidence, and to be bold, secure, and carefree. David applied this principle when facing Goliath, and so can we when facing the “Goliath’s” of our lives.

*1Sa 17:47 “...And that all this assembly may know that the LORD does not deliver by sword or by spear; for the battle is the Lord’s and He will give you into our hands.”*

*Isa 41:10 “Do not fear, for I am with you; do not anxiously look about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen you, surely I will help you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous right hand.”*

God has given us the promises, the doctrine, and the power, everything necessary to raise the shield of faith, Deu 30:11-19.

*Deu 30:11-19 “For this commandment which I command you today is not too difficult for you, nor is it out of reach. It is not in heaven, that you should say, ‘Who will go up to heaven for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?’ Nor is it beyond the sea, that you should say, ‘Who will cross the sea for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?’ But the word is very near you, in your mouth and in your heart, that you may observe it. See, I have set before you today life and prosperity, and death and adversity; in that I command you today to love the LORD your God, to walk in His ways and to keep His commandments and His statutes and His judgments, that you may live and multiply, and that the LORD your God may bless you in the land where you are entering to possess it. But if your heart turns away and you will not obey, but are drawn away and worship other gods and serve them, I declare to you today that you shall surely perish. You shall not prolong your days in the land where you are crossing the Jordan to enter and possess it. I call heaven and earth to witness against you today, that I have set before you life and death, the blessing and the curse. So choose life in order that you may live, you and your descendants.”*

*Pro 3:5-6 Trust in the LORD with all your heart, and do not lean on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight.*

A third Hebrew word for faith is “qavah,” which means to wait or look eagerly for, linger for, hope, expect, collect, bind together, or be collected. It depicts a fine thread woven into a giant rope that cannot be broken. This is the faith that derives its strength from outside itself.

*Isa 40:31 Yet those who wait for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary.*

It is important to understand that once you have given Him your problem, you must leave it in His hands and move on. Do not interject human solutions; you will be miserable and have no rest. The result of living in faith-rest in spite of the pressures and temptations is an exchange of human power for divine omnipotence. Remember that the Lord will either deliver you from the situation or (more likely) He will give you the strength and contentment to endure the situation so that you can say as Job did in Job 13:15, “*Though He slay me, I will hope in Him.*”

The mechanics of the faith-rest drill are comprised of three stages:

Stage 1: Faith claims a promise.

Stage 2: Faith develops a rationale.

Stage 3: Faith draws a doctrinal conclusion.

In Stage 1, faith claims promises from the Bible, combining the promises of God with faith.

In Stage 2, faith claims doctrinal rationales, known as “reverse concentration” (application of doctrine). Doctrinal rationales include the essence of God, the plan of God, and logistical grace.

In Stage 3, faith reaches doctrinal conclusions and is in control of the situation. In this stage the believer rests and waits on the timing of God.

The *plan of God* rationale employs five principles that support the predesigned plan of God for every believer, and applies them to the problem at hand.

1. Foreknowledge: God has been caring about me since eternity past.
2. Predestination: God has taken care of every detail of my life.
3. Election: God has called me for a special purpose.
4. Justification: God is gracing me out now.
5. Glorification: God is going to grace me out forever.

The *logistical grace* rationale says that it is impossible for anyone who has imputed divine righteousness to lack anything, because the justice of God sends life support and blessing to all believers.

*2 Co 9:8 And God is able to make all grace abound to you, so that always having all sufficiency in everything, you may have an abundance for every good deed.*

1. Logistical grace includes four categories of support:
2. Life-sustaining support. God sustains the life of every believer on earth. No believer can depart from this life apart from God's will, Phi 4:19, "*And my God will supply all your needs according to His riches in glory in Christ Jesus.*"
3. Temporal needs such as food, clothing, shelter, transportation, environment, time, and a job.
4. Security provision, including guardian angels, divine establishment, and the wall of fire (for positive believers only, as security to make the advance to spiritual maturity), 1Pe 1:5, "*You are protected by the power of God through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*"
5. Spiritual riches, such as the portfolio of invisible assets, the 10 problem-solving devices, the 10 unique factors of Church-age, the completed Canon of Scripture, a local assembly, doctrinal teaching from our right pastor-teacher, the privacy of our royal priesthood, and the royal family honor code, Eph 1:3, "*Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ.*"

The word "*batach*" is used repeatedly in the Psalms to remind us to cast or "slam" our problems on the Lord and maintain our confidence.

*Psa 27:3 Though a host encamp against me, my heart will not fear; though war arise against me, in spite of this I shall be confident.*

*Psa 28:77 The LORD is my strength and my shield; my heart trusts in Him, and I am helped; therefore my heart exults, and with my song I shall thank Him.*

*Psa 115:9-11 O Israel, trust in the LORD; He is their help and their shield. O house of Aaron, trust in the LORD; He is their help and their shield. You who fear the LORD, trust in the LORD; He is their help and their shield.*

If the problem is hopeless, and you are helpless, now is the time to trust the Lord to come through for you. The faith-rest drill means coming to the end of your rope—and then remembering that your Father is in the "rope business." As we have learned from the meaning of "*qavah*," when we place our faith in His power, that faith is like a thread woven into an unbreakable rope that will never let us fall.

*1 Pe 5:7 Casting all your anxiety on Him, because He cares for you.*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 14

The Mechanics of the Faith-Rest Drill

Hebrews 4:1-3

02/09/03

In our ongoing study of the Satanic Game Plan, we have been looking at the basic problem-solving device that God provides for believers in the Church-age, which enables us to handle the attacks of our enemy. It is called the faith-rest drill, represented by the “shield of faith” in Eph 6:16, *“In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.”*

The faith-rest drill is a versatile technique able to overcome any difficulty, problem, or disaster in life. By faith the believer applies doctrine logically while resting in God’s promises.

*Psa 27:5 For in the day of trouble He will conceal me in His tabernacle [promises]; in the secret place of His tent [doctrine] He will hide me; He will lift me up on a rock [occupation with Christ].*

We have now noted 3 different Hebrew words for *faith*.

1. *“Aman”* is a verb meaning to believe, support, or use someone as a crutch. The root meaning is a foundation on which you build something; a foster-father, pillars, or supporters of the door.
2. *“Batach”* is a verb meaning to trust in the sense of “slamming” your troubles on God; this word carries a vivid faith-rest connotation—to have confidence, be bold, be secure, and be carefree.
3. *“Qavah”* means to wait or look eagerly for, to linger for, hope, expect, collect, or bind together. It depicts a fine thread woven into a giant rope that cannot be broken, representing faith that takes its strength from a source outside itself. As we study the meaning of this word we are reminded that once we give God our problem, we are to leave it in His hands and move on. We must not interject human solutions, but wait on Him.

*Isa 40:31 Yet those who wait for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary.*

The result of living in faith-rest, in spite of the pressures and temptations, is an *exchange* of human power for divine omnipotence. The Lord will either deliver you from the situation or (more likely) He will give you the strength and contentment to endure the situation. With faith we can say as Job did in Job 13:15, *“Though He slay me, I will hope in Him.”*

The mechanics of the faith-rest drill include 3 stages.

1. Stage 1: Faith claims promises from the Bible—combining the promises of God with faith.
2. Stage 2: Faith claims doctrinal rationales, such as the *essence of God* rationale—*reverse concentration*, which means taking the doctrine *out of* your soul and applying it to the situation, after you have already taken the doctrine *into* your soul by studying under your pastor-teacher.
3. Stage 3: Faith reaches doctrinal conclusions and takes control of the situation—resting and waiting on the timing of God.

We establish fellowship with God (the filling of the Holy Spirit) through Biblical confession of sin (1Jo 1:9, 1Co 11:31, Psa 32:5). Then we regain a relaxed mental attitude by claiming promises from the Word of God. No believer can apply doctrine while the mentality of the soul is controlled by fear, worry, or panic.

The first stage of the faith-rest drill is claiming a pertinent promise, then stabilizing the mentality so that concentration on doctrine can begin. This is necessary because fear and emotion have revolted against thought, and you must take conscious, bold steps to restore divine viewpoint thinking in your soul. We then can take control of the situation as we reach doctrinal conclusions. This becomes the function of *spiritual self-esteem*.

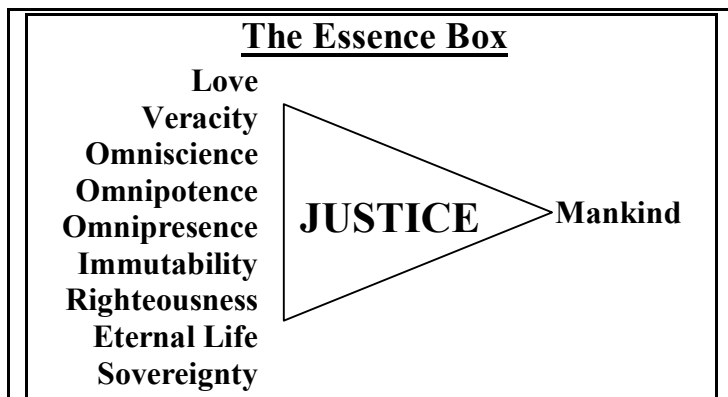
With confidence restored, we can assess the situation and make decisions from a position of strength. We can take appropriate actions based on sound judgment and common sense. Remember, if the problem is hopeless, and you are helpless, now it is time to trust the Lord to come through for you. Testing is designed as a “field training” exercise in the spiritual warfare of the angelic conflict. Every time you apply doctrine in your soul to a problem, there is a decoration reserved for you in heaven.

*Zep 3:17 The Lord your God is in your midst, a victorious warrior. He will rejoice over you with joy; He will rest in His love, He will rejoice over you with singing.*

Since concentration on doctrine requires a *relaxed mental attitude*, the believer’s mental attitude becomes a prime target of satanic opposition against the power of God’s Word. God has provided a place of inner peace, happiness, stability, and power within the grasp of every Christian, often called “rest” in the Bible. This is available in the midst of the most difficult circumstances, pressures, and problems. God has given us promises and doctrines in His Word, and it is our job to learn, believe, and use them to solve our problems.

The faith-rest drill claims a promise, and then that faith develops a rationale and then draws a doctrinal conclusion. By mentally following a rationale in a crisis, you are re-explaining to yourself basic concepts of doctrine that pertain to your relationship with God.

When you thoroughly understand the doctrine of the *essence of God* and apply it in adversity or prosperity, you will possess and maintain peace and stability in every experience of life.



Every attribute of the essence of God gives us reason to trust His character and His plan.

- **Love:** His love is perfect and never subject to the pettiness and conditions attached to human love.
- **Veracity:** He is perfect truth; He can never lie, and therefore *all* His promises are fulfilled.
- **Omniscience:** He knows all; He knew all about your problem billions of years ago.
- **Omnipotence:** He is all-powerful; there is nothing in your life He cannot handle.
- **Omnipresence:** He is everywhere-present; He is always with you.
- **Immutability:** He can never change; He will always treat you in the same way your entire life—in grace.
- **Righteousness:** He has perfect integrity (including perfect justice); He can never be wrong, and no decision he makes through His justice can ever compromise His perfect righteousness.
- **Eternal Life:** He is eternal, with no beginning and no end; He has given this same life to you, and He will always be with you.
- **Sovereignty:** He is the ruler of the universe; He is in complete control of history, and nothing happens without His consent, including your problems.

- Justice: Our point of contact with God is His perfect justice; all things that come to us from Him (whether blessing or discipline) come through His justice. He can never render a wrong decision; every decision made by the Lord Jesus Christ, as the Supreme Court Judge, is always perfectly fair and just, according to the standards of His perfect righteousness.

*1Sa 2:6-8 "The LORD kills and makes alive; He brings down to Sheol and raises up. The LORD makes poor and rich; He brings low, He also exalts. He raises the poor from the dust, He lifts the needy from the ash heap to make them sit with nobles, and inherit a seat of honor; for the pillars of the earth are the Lord's, and He set the world on them."*

In the *plan of God* rationale, there are five principles that support the predesigned plan of God for every believer, and that can be applied to the problem at hand.

1. Foreknowledge: God has been caring about me since eternity past.
2. Predestination: God has taken care of every detail of my life.
3. Election: God has called me for a special purpose.
4. Justification: God is gracing me out now.
5. Glorification: God is going to grace me out forever.

In *logistical grace* there are four categories of support.

1. Life-sustaining support. God sustains the life of every believer on earth. No believer can depart from life apart from His will, Phi 4:19, *"And my God will supply all your needs according to His riches in glory in Christ Jesus."*
2. Temporal needs such as food, clothing, shelter, transportation, environment, time, and occupation.
3. Security provision, including guardian angels, divine establishment, and the wall of fire (for positive believers in the advance to maturity), 1Pe 1:5, *"You are protected by the power of God through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time."*
4. Spiritual riches, such as the portfolio of invisible assets, the 10 problem-solving devices, the 10 unique factors of Church-age, the Canon of Scripture, the local church, doctrinal teaching from one's right pastor-teacher, the privacy of the Royal Priesthood, and the Royal Family honor code.

A *rationale* is defined as a "reasoned exposition of principles," an "explanation or statement of reasons." As we have already noted, the faith of the Christian way of life is a logical faith based on solid evidence.

The faith-rest life is not an excuse for "hyper-spirituality." There is no room in the Christian way of life for laziness or irresponsibility, or ignoring the works that God sets before us in our Christian service. "Quietism" is a false doctrine that teaches that the believer is entirely passive, and ignores the principle of divine good in the believer's life. The Quietists maintain that religion consists in the withdrawal of the mind from worldly interests and anxieties and its constant employment in the passive "contemplation" of God and His attributes. This heresy contradicts many great passages, such as 1Co 9:24, Phi 3:14, 2Ti 4:7, and Job 38:3.

*1Co 9:24 Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but only one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may win.*

*Phi 3:14 I press on toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.*

*2Ti 4:7 I have fought the good fight, I have finished the course, I have kept the faith.*

*Job 38:3 "Now gird up your loins like a man..."*

In nearly every significant passage on the faith-rest drill, the waiting and trusting is balanced by a command for rigor, alertness, and strenuous striving. God provides all the assets; it is up to us to use them. Our volition must continue to respond to His guidance in our doctrinal studies, application, service, and prayers. All the power and blessing comes through the indwelling work of the Holy Spirit.

The desires of the soul to be conformed to the image of Christ are the direct result of the grace of God, not something we generate from the flesh.

The faith-rest drill is a vital, basic function of the Christian life. Without it, our spiritual walk is doomed to failure, and we will have a life filled with stress and misery.

*Heb 4:1-3 Therefore, let us fear lest, while a promise remains of entering His rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it. For indeed we have had good news preached to us, just as they also; but the word they heard did not profit them, because it was not united by faith in those who heard. For we who have believed enter that rest, just as He has said, "As I swore in My wrath, they shall not enter My rest," although His works were finished from the foundation of the world.*

As the believer grows spiritually and consistently learns Bible doctrine, the "mind of Christ," he will move beyond claiming promises to the point where he will rely completely on the character and nature of God, a God who is always faithful, and whose heartbeat is always for the recovery and restoration of those who have failed.

*Isa 57:15 For thus says the high and exalted One who lives forever, whose name is Holy, "I dwell on a high and holy place, and also with the contrite and lowly of spirit in order to revive the spirit of the lowly and to revive the heart of the contrite."*



# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 15

The "Essence Of God" Rationale

Deuteronomy 6:4

02/16/03

We have been continuing our study of the Satanic Game Plan to distract the believer in spiritual warfare. We have been looking at the weapons that God has provided for us, including the faith-rest drill, called the "shield of faith" in Eph 6:16, *"In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one."*

The faith-rest drill is a sure solution for overcoming any difficulty, problem, or disaster in life. God has provided us with a place of inner peace, happiness, stability, and power within our grasp, and it is available in the midst of all difficult circumstances.

The mechanics of the faith-rest drill are comprised of three stages.

- Faith claims a promise.
- Faith develops a rationale.
- Faith draws a doctrinal conclusion.

God has given us promises and doctrines in the Bible. It is our job to learn them, believe them, and use them to solve our problems.

When you thoroughly understand the essence of God and apply it in adversity and prosperity, you will possess and maintain peace and stability in every experience of life. If the problem is hopeless, and you are helpless, it is time to trust the Lord. Testing is a means of training us as Christian soldiers in the angelic conflict. Every time we apply doctrine under pressure, we are given a decoration in heaven, Zep 3:17, *"The LORD your God is in your midst, a victorious warrior. He will rejoice over you with joy; He will rest in His love, He will rejoice over you with singing."*

While we enter into God's rest through the shield of faith, there is no room in the Christian way of life for laziness or irresponsibility. As we have seen, "Quietism" is a false doctrine that teaches that the believer is entirely passive, and basically eliminates the principle of application, and the service of the Christian soldier. In nearly every significant passage that teaches on faith-rest, the waiting and trusting is balanced by a command for rigor, alertness, and striving. The desires of the soul to be conformed to the image of Christ are the direct result of the grace of God, not something we generate from the flesh. There is no such thing as "drifting" into spiritual maturity; there is however, a danger of drifting into cosmic influence and reversionism.

*Heb 4:1-3 Therefore, let us fear lest, while a promise remains of entering His rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it. For indeed we have had good news preached to us, just as they also; but the word they heard did not profit them, because it was not united by faith in those who heard. For we who have believed enter that rest, just as He has said, "As I swore in My wrath, they shall not enter My rest."*

The Word of God is as willing to warn us as comfort us, and as ready to command us as to promise us. The Faith-Rest Technique

To Establish fellowship with God (the filling of the Holy Spirit) through Biblical confession of sin.

1. You may then recover a relaxed mental attitude by claiming promises from the Word. The first stage of the faith-rest drill is to claim a pertinent promise from the Word of God. There are over 7,000 promises in the Bible for the believer to claim.

2. As a means of calling up divine viewpoint thinking, concentrate on pertinent doctrines related to the issue at hand.

A rationale is a "reasoned exposition of principles," an "explanation or statement of reasons," or a "set of reasoned rules or directions." It is an unassailable, watertight, ironclad argument.

Doctrinal rationales include the following:

- The essence of God
- The plan of God
- Logistical grace
- *A fortiori*
- Escrow and election

The definition of “essence” is *“The quality or qualities of a thing that give it its identity; the intrinsic or indispensable properties of a thing.”* Essence refers to the qualities or attributes of God, attributes which have always existed. Essence is what remains stable in the midst of change. Without essence, a thing would not be what it actually is. Without His divine essence, God would not be God. The qualities and perfections that belong to God are classified as His attributes. The sum total of God’s attributes is His essence.

The Bible also clearly reveals that there are three Persons to whom all the attributes of divine essence belong. The Trinity, one God with three distinct personalities, is taught in Isa 48:16, Mat 28:19, 2Co 13:14, 1Pe 1:12.

*Mat 28:19 “Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit.”*

*Deu 6:4 “Hear, O Israel! The LORD is our God, the LORD is one!”*

The oneness of God refers to His essence. God is one in essence. This means that all the characteristics of divine essence are resident in each member of the Godhead. The attributes or essence of God belong to three Persons—God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit, who are one God in essence.

Divine essence is the description of the characteristics which belong to all three members of the Godhead. The Bible does not seek to prove the essence of God; it simply assumes it to be true. In fact, the Bible teaches that only the fool denies His existence.

*Psa 14:1 The fool has said in his heart, “There is no God.”*

The believer is totally dependent upon divine revelation in the Canon of Scripture to understand exactly what God is like, the nature and attributes of God, and what forms His divine substance or essence. At no point does the believer feel his limitations more than when confronted with the responsibility of accurately understanding the essence of God.

The *essence of God* rationale recognizes each attribute of God and applies that attribute to a crisis. This results in a doctrinal conclusion to control the situation because of who and what God is Sovereignty: God is supreme in rule, and has authority over all things. He can do whatever He desires, and nothing happens without His consent. (1Sa 2:6-8, 1Ti 2:1-8)

*1Sa 2:6-8 “The LORD kills and makes alive; He brings down to Sheol and raises up. The LORD makes poor and rich; He brings low, He also exalts. He raises the poor from the dust, He lifts the needy from the ash heap to make them sit with nobles, and inherit a seat of honor; for the pillars of the earth are the Lord’s, and He set the world on them.”*

Righteousness: God is absolute holiness, and has perfect integrity. He can never be wrong. He is totally perfect in His attitudes, actions, and ways. (Isa 57:15)

*Isa 57:15 For thus says the high and exalted One who lives forever, whose name is Holy, “I dwell on a high and holy place, and also with the contrite and lowly of spirit In order to revive the spirit of the lowly and to revive the heart of the contrite.”*

Justice: God is fair, and has no part in partiality. Justice is the believer’s point of contact with God. Justice is the source of grace (both blessing and discipline). (Deu 32:4, Neh 9:33, Psa 89:14, 2Ch 19:7)

*2Ch 19:7 “Now then let the fear of the LORD be upon you; be very careful what you do, for the LORD our God will have no part in unrighteousness or partiality or the taking of a bribe.”*

Immutability: God is absolute stability. God never changes, and He is always faithful. He never gets weary or tired. He will not change His mind. He will always treat you the same way—in grace! (Isa 40:28; Psalm 33: 11; Psa 102:23-28, 119:89-90; Heb 13:8)

*Psa 119:89-90 Forever, O LORD, Your word is settled in heaven. Your faithfulness continues throughout all generations; You established the earth, and it stands.*

Eternal Life: God always was and always will be. God has no beginning or end. He has given this same life to each believer. His provisions were given in eternity past. (Exo 3:13-14, Psa 90:1-6, Joh 3:36)

*Psa 90:1-6 Lord, You have been our dwelling place in all generations. Before the mountains were born or You gave birth to the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God. You turn man back into dust and say, "Return, O children of men." For a thousand years in Your sight are like yesterday when it passes by, or as a watch in the night. You have swept them away like a flood, they fall asleep; in the morning they are like grass which sprouts anew. In the morning it flourishes and sprouts anew; toward evening it fades and withers away.*

Veracity: God is perfect truth. He can never lie. He will always provide the exact truth we need to handle any situation in life. All His promises are fulfilled. (Psa 12:6, Joh 1:17, 8:30-32, 16:13, 17:17)

*Psa 12:6 The words of the LORD are pure words; as silver tried in a furnace on the earth, refined seven times.*

*Joh 8:30-32 As He spoke these things, many came to believe in Him. So Jesus was saying to those Jews who had believed Him, "If you continue in My word, then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you will know the truth, and the truth will make you free."*

Love: God has infinite concern and desire for His loved ones, such that He is motivated to give unconditionally and sacrificially for their benefit. (Joh 3:16, 15:13; 1Jo 4:7-9)

*1Jo 4:7-9 Beloved, let us love one another, for love is from God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. The one who does not love does not know God, for God is love. By this the love of God was manifested in us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world so that we might live through Him.*

Love is a choice to do what is best for another person.

Omniscience: God knows all things. God never had to learn anything. God knows every thought, intent, and action. He knew about your problem billions of years ago. (Psa 139:1-6, Isa 46:10)

*Isaiah 46:10 "Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times things which have not been done, saying, 'My purpose will be established, and I will accomplish all My good pleasure.'"*

Omnipresence: God is everywhere-present. God is present throughout the universe (immanent), and He exists apart from the universe (transcendent). God is always with you. (Psa 73:23-24, Jer 23:23-24, Mat 28:20)

*Jer 23:23-24 "Am I a God who is near," declares the LORD, "And not a God far off? Can a man hide himself in hiding places So I do not see him?" declares the LORD. "Do I not fill the heavens and the earth?" declares the LORD.*

Omnipotence: God is all-powerful and limitless in ability. God has the power to do whatever He wants to. There is nothing in your life that He cannot handle.

*Jer 32:17 "Ah Lord GOD! Behold, You have made the heavens and the earth by Your great power and by Your outstretched arm! Nothing is too difficult for You."*

*Psa 115:3 But our God is in the heavens; He does whatever He pleases.*

Every one of God's attributes gives us comfort and confidence when facing the trials of life.

1. Sovereignty: The King of the universe, my "Dad," gave orders in eternity past to solve my problem.

2. Righteousness: I have the righteousness of Christ, so God is “tripping over Himself” to bless me.
3. Justice: The Supreme Court of Heaven is open for my business.
4. Immutability: God will always be faithful to me.
5. Eternal Life: Death has no more power over me.
6. Veracity: I can count on God’s Word setting me free.
7. Love: The Creator of the universe loves me with a love too great for me to even comprehend.
8. Omniscience: God knew all about these problems in eternity past.
9. Omnipresence: God is right by my side.
10. Omnipotence: My loving Father, who intensely desires to have the most intimate relationship with me, made this whole universe with a flick of His wrist. I am His child..... enemies beware.

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 16

The Doctrine of Fear  
1 Corinthians 15:54-57  
02/23/03

Our study of the Doctrine of the Angelic Conflict has brought us to the subject of the Satanic Game Plan. Satan's plan is to distract the believer from God's plan in spiritual warfare, and God has provided all the weapons we need, including the faith-rest drill, called the "shield of faith."

*Eph 6:16 In addition to all, taking up the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.*

By way of review, the stages of the faith-rest drill are as follows:

Stage 1: Faith claims a promise.

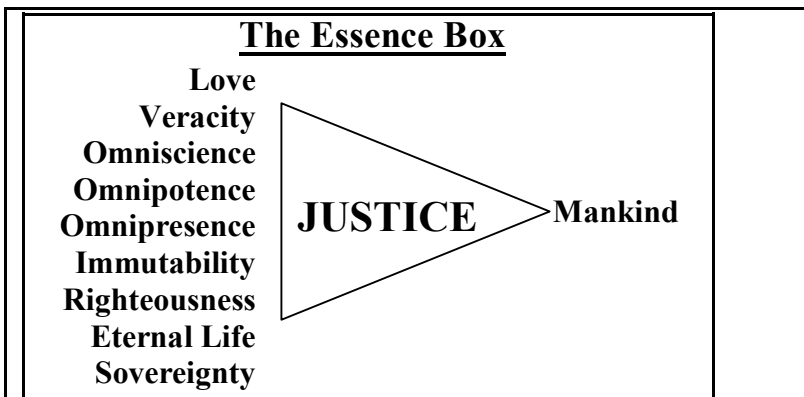
Stage 2: Faith develops a rationale.

Stage 3: Faith draws a doctrinal conclusion.

Raising the shield of faith includes calling up divine viewpoint thinking, and then concentrating on pertinent doctrines related to the issue at hand.

Applying doctrinal rationales is an important aspect of faith-rest.

The Essence of God Rationale



1. Sovereignty: The King of the universe gave orders in eternity past to solve any of our problems.
2. Righteousness: As believers we have the righteousness of Christ, so God is pleased to bless us.
3. Justice: The Supreme Court of Heaven is open for our business.
4. Immutability: God will always be faithful to us.
5. Eternal Life: Death has no more power over any believer.
6. Veracity: As believers, we can bank on God's Word freeing us.
7. Love: The Creator of the universe loves us.
8. Omniscience: God knew all about our lives in eternity past.
9. Omnipresence: God is right at our side.
10. Omnipotence: The very One who loves us made this whole universe with a flick of His wrist.

When we thoroughly understand the doctrine of divine essence and apply it in both adversity and prosperity, we possess and maintain the peace and stability God intends for us, in every experience of life.

As we have studied, the *plan of God* rationale employs five principles that support the predesigned plan of God for every believer, and applies these principles to the problem at hand.

- Foreknowledge: God has been caring about me since eternity past.
- Predestination: God has taken care of every detail of my life

- Election: God has called me for a special purpose.
- Justification: God is gracing me out now.
- Glorification: God is going to grace me out forever.

The *logistical grace* rationale, which we have also covered, says it is impossible for anyone who has imputed divine righteousness to lack anything, because the justice of God sends life support and blessing to all believers.

*2 Co 9:8 And God is able to make all grace abound to you, so that always having all sufficiency in everything, you may have an abundance for every good deed.*

Logistical grace includes four categories of support.

Life-sustaining support. God sustains the life of every believer on earth. No believer can depart from this life apart from God's will.

*Phi 4:19 And my God will supply all your needs according to His riches in glory in Christ Jesus.*

Temporal needs such as food, clothing, shelter, transportation, environment, time, and a job.

*Psa 37:25 I have been young, and now I am old; yet I have not seen the righteous forsaken, or his descendants begging bread.*

Security provision, including guardian angels, divine establishment, and the wall of fire (for positive believers only, as security to make the advance to spiritual maturity).

*1Pe 1:5 You are protected by the power of God through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*

Spiritual riches, such as the portfolio of invisible assets, the 10 problem-solving devices, the 10 unique factors of the Church-age, the Canon of Scripture, a local church, doctrinal teaching from one's right pastor-teacher, privacy, and the Royal Family honor code.

*Eph 1:3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ.*

The mature believer goes beyond just claiming promises; he also applies doctrinal principles. He understands that God's plan is greater than his sins, failures, weaknesses, sufferings, and even victories.

*1Jo 4:4 Greater is He who is in you [the omnipotence of the Father indwelling us and the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit in the predesigned plan of God] than he who is in the world [Satan and his cosmic system].*

We have seen that Satan's strategy is twofold: (1) to replace Bible doctrine circulating in the soul with human viewpoint thinking among positive believers, and (2) to frustrate God's plan for the believer's life by placing obstacles and hindrances in his way.

Satan's first tactic is to accuse believers, to intimidate them and condemn them with guilt.

*Phi 1:28 Likewise in no way be intimidated by your enemies which, not being intimidated, to them is a manifestation of their destructive ways, but with reference to you, deliverance, in fact this is from the source of God.*

Satan's second tactic is to cause believers to fear.

*Joh 8:44 "You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature; for he is a liar, and the father of lies."*

The first lie ever told to the human race is recorded in Gen 3:2-4.

*Gen 3:2-4 And the woman said to the serpent, "From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat; but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, lest you die.'" And the serpent said to the woman, "You surely shall not die!"*

Satan's first deception concerned death, and he uses the fear of death to enslave members of the human race.

*Heb 2:14-15 Since then the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same, that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil; and might deliver those who through fear of death were subject to slavery all their lives.*

"You can discover what your enemy fears most by observing the means he uses to frighten you." What does Satan fear the most?

- The prison of the lake of fire.
- Torment, pain, and discomfort.
- Wrath and judgment.
- Loss of power and prestige.
- Condemnation (proven wrong).
- Isolation (no admirers).
- Death.

The born-again believer must never forget that our Lord Jesus Christ has already won the victory over death.

*1Co 15:54-57 But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then will come about the saying that is written, "Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?" The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law; but thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

### The Doctrine of Fear

Satan will use fear to distract the believer and put him in bondage. There are many commands in God's Word not to fear because Satan sponsors fear to distract the believer from the God's plan for his life. Satan attempts to neutralize doctrine in the soul through worry, fear, anxiety, mental attitude sins, and reaction to historical disaster. Whenever the grace of God is portrayed, the kingdom of darkness attacks. In fact, this is the weapon being used by the pawns in the war being waged by the fanatical followers of the Satanic religion of Islam—*terrorism*.

**Point 1:** Definition. Fear is used two ways in the Bible. First, fear is used for a mental attitude sin, characterized by panic when in a dangerous situation, as well as intimidation. Panic, by definition, is action without thinking. Fear is also defined as lack of thinking under pressure. This type of fear is a painful emotional distress aroused by impending pain, danger, disaster, or evil, or by illusions regarding the same.

*1Jo 4:18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears is not perfected in love.*

*Pro 22:3 The prudent sees the evil and hides himself, but the naive go on, and are punished for it.*

Fear is an active feeling of dread, of which fright and terror are the more intense degrees.

The Greek word for "fear" is "*phobeo*," translated "afraid" in Mat 25:25. This word, as used in this passage, means *afraid, put to flight by terror, scared away, struck by fear, seized with alarm, struck with amazement, or to fear or hesitate*. In a positive sense, it can also mean to treat another with deference or reverent obedience, and connotes awe and wonder.

*Mat 25:24-29 "And the one also who had received the one talent came up and said, 'Master, I knew you to be a hard man, reaping where you did not sow, and gathering where you scattered no seed. And I was afraid, and went away and hid your talent in the ground; see, you have what is yours.' But his master answered and said to him, 'You wicked, lazy slave, you knew that I reap where I did not sow, and gather where I scattered*

*no seed. Then you ought to have put my money in the bank, and on my arrival I would have received my money back with interest. Therefore take away the talent from him, and give it to the one who has the ten talents.' For to everyone who has shall more be given, and he shall have an abundance; but from the one who does not have, even what he does have shall be taken away."*

Fear can also include worry, apprehension, consternation, or horror. Fear of death is the most potent fear of all, and many other fears and phobias are merely its results. However, it is not death that a man should fear, it is *never beginning to live* that he should fear.

*Isa 51:12-13 I, even I, am He who comforts you. Who are you that you are afraid of man who dies, and of the son of man who is made like grass; that you have forgotten the LORD your Maker, who stretched out the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth; that you fear continually all day long because of the fury of the oppressor, as he makes ready to destroy? But where is the fury of the oppressor?*

The second use of fear refers to reverence, respect, or awe. It is a reverence manifesting itself in obedience. In this respect, fear is a Christian virtue. This is a reverence manifesting itself in obedience.

*Pro 22:4 The reward of humility and the fear of the LORD are riches, honor and life.*

When used in this second sense, the object of fear is rightly God, His Word, and His plans, actions, and accomplishments in human history.

*Pro 14:26-27 In the fear of the LORD there is strong confidence, and his children will have refuge. The fear of the LORD is a fountain of life, that one may avoid the snares of death.*



# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 17

The Doctrine of Fear Part 2

Philippians 1:12-14

03/02/03

In our ongoing study of the Satanic Game Plan for Church-age believers, we have begun a study of the Doctrine of Fear, and we have seen that Satan's second strategy is to sponsor fear to distract the believer from the predesigned plan of God. But as the Scriptures teach, the believer has no reason to be distracted by fear.

*Phi 1:28 Likewise in no way be intimidated by your enemies which, not being intimidated, to them is a manifestation of their destructive ways, but with reference to you, deliverance, in fact this is from the source of God.*

*Mat 10:28 "And do not fear those who kill the body, but are unable to kill the soul; but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell."*

Fear and the faith-rest drill struggle for control of the baby believer's soul. Fear is a part of the *emotion complex of sins*, which is a whole system of sins that includes worry, anxiety, insecurity, and incapability of doctrinal application, and therefore inability to use the *problem-solving devices*. If a believer has fear, worry, anxiety, or insecurity in he life, he is sinning in those areas.

*Rom 14:23b Whatever is not from faith is sin.*

Often, fear of one evil drives us to live in an even more destructive evil. It is fear that defeats more people than any other force in the world. In fact, in both the natural realm and the spiritual life of a believer, it is not until we face our fears that we begin to live the life God has intended. Overcoming fear is a test of maturity. Fear is crippling and it shackles those who could do great things and prevents them from even attempting those accomplishments. It chokes and kills dreams and creativity. The unfortunate aspect of fear is that it is a *learned* behavior; it is something we choose to allow in our soul. Many believers discover that once they face their fear, it turns out that it was not such a serious threat after all.

*Psa 53:5 There they were in great fear where no fear had been; for God scattered the bones of him who encamped against you.*

*Pro 28:1 The wicked flee when no one is pursuing, but the righteous are bold as a lion.*

To face one's fear and not be afraid is the final test of maturity.

The first point in our study of the Doctrine of Fear was the Definition of fear. We are now ready for Point 2.

Point 2: The Snowballing Principle of Fear. The extent to which you surrender to fear is your capacity for fear. We have been studying the "snowballing" principle of fear and the different types of phobias. The more of these phobias or fears to which one surrenders, the more new things he will fear. Fear only leads to more fear, including fear in the lives of those around us.

*Deu 20:8 "Then the officers shall speak further to the people, and they shall say, 'Who is the man that is afraid and fainthearted? Let him depart and return to his house, so that he might not make his brothers' hearts melt like his heart.'"*

Increasing fear means increasing insecurity, which destroys your capacity for love, life, happiness, and blessing. It not only affects you, but others in your periphery as well. We are designed by God to be rational creatures, but fear makes us irrational. Irrationality means loss of identity, which means the accumulation of fear until you are afraid of life. Only when we are no longer afraid do we really begin to live. Where fear is, happiness is not.

It has been said that "fear gives the wolf the strength of the bear." The greater your capacity for fear, the more you increase the power of fear in your life. When you are afraid of something, you give

it power over you. Likewise, when you are afraid of a person, you give that person power over you. The more you increase the power of fear in your life, the stronger your mindset as a loser believer.

Fear can produce sickness and depression; in Gen 21:17, Hagar was worried sick and ailing physically because of fear. Fear can even result in suicide; in 1Ki 19:4, Elijah was so afraid of a threat from a woman that he wanted to die. The more things that acquire the power of fear in your life, the more punitive suffering and self-induced misery you bring on yourself. The greater your mindset as a loser believer while living, the greater the intensification of your fear when dying. The mature believer, however, remembers and applies scriptures such as Psa 23:4, *“Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil; for Thou art with me.”* For the believer, the fear of death is more to be dreaded than death itself.

The greater one’s capacity for fear, the greater his capacity for arrogance. You can not be afraid without putting an abnormal emphasis on yourself. Fear makes you totally preoccupied with *you*. Fear then results in three very destructive things—the *arrogance skills*, the *arrogance complex of sins*, and the *emotion complex of sins*. This includes:

- Jealousy. If you’re afraid of losing someone, you become jealous when they show favoritism toward anyone else.
- Bitterness. You become bitter toward that person because they don’t give you the affection and attention you think you deserve.
- Vindictiveness.
- Implacability.
- Revenge motivation.

Fear cannot coexist with the plan of God in your life, and it eliminates your personal sense of destiny. Fear of death will never prevent your dying, but it will prevent your living.

**Point 3:** The Solution to Fear. The predesigned plan of God is designed to remove all the cobwebs of fear in your soul and replace them with *confidence* in doctrine, which leads to confidence in the Lord.

*Phi 1:12-14 Now I want you to know, brethren, that my circumstances have turned out for the greater progress of the gospel, so that my imprisonment in the cause of Christ has become well known throughout the whole praetorian guard and to everyone else, and that most of the brethren, trusting in the Lord because of my imprisonment, have far more courage to speak the word of God without fear.*

The *motivational* virtue of confidence towards God results in the *functional* virtue of courage towards people and circumstances. The more doctrine we know, the greater is our confidence in God.

*Heb 13:5-6 Let your character be free from the love of money, being content with what you have; for He Himself has said, “I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you,” so that we confidently say, “The Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid. What shall man do to me?”*

*Rom 8:38-39 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

Here the Apostle Paul uses the doctrine of eternal security to give us comfort and confidence, as he lists all the things that could cause us fear, and reminds that none of these can ever affect our salvation or separate us from the Lord.

*Rom 8:31 What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who is against us?*

Fear is met and destroyed with *courage*, which is the ability to *think properly under pressure*. It is *not* some instantaneous physiological rush followed by macho ravings. True courage is lived by the Christian hero who thinks and applies doctrine day by day, moment by moment, under all circumstances.

*2Co 5:6-7 Therefore, being always of good courage, and knowing that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord—for we walk by faith, not by sight.*

Fear has many eyes. The more “eyes” we have, the more fears we will see (real or imagined). Therefore, we walk by faith and not by our human sight.

Courage is not the absence of fear, but rather the decision that *something else matters more*. The greatest example of this is our Lord as He faced the Cross.

*Joh 12:27 “Now My soul has become troubled; and what shall I say, ‘Father, save Me from this hour’? But for this purpose I came to this hour.”*

*Heb 11:24-27 By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter; choosing rather to endure ill-treatment with the people of God, than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin; considering the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt; for he was looking to the reward. By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured, as seeing Him who is unseen.*

When you decide to face your fear, most of the time you will discover that it was not really such a serious threat after all.

*2Ti 1:7 For God has not given us a spirit of timidity [fear], but of power and love and discipline.*

Fear always springs from ignorance. If we had enough understanding, we would never be afraid. The worst fear in life is fear of the unknown.

*Joh 16:33 “These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. In the world you have tribulation, but take courage; I have overcome the world.”*

The Greek verb translated “take courage” is “*tharseo*,” which means to be *cheerful, courageous, confident, of good comfort, of good courage, or of good cheer*. It is also used in Mar 6:50. In this passage we see the ignorance and lack of faith in our Lord’s own apostles, which reminds us that there is always hope, no matter how we have failed in the past.

*Mar 6:48-52 And seeing them straining at the oars, for the wind was against them, at about the fourth watch of the night, He came to them, walking on the sea; and He intended to pass by them. But when they saw Him walking on the sea, they supposed that it was a ghost, and cried out; for they all saw Him and were frightened. But immediately He spoke with them and said to them, “Take courage; it is I, do not be afraid.” And He got into the boat with them, and the wind stopped; and they were greatly astonished, for they had not gained any insight from the incident of the loaves [the miracle the Lord had performed to feed 5,000 people], but their heart was hardened.*

In Act 27, which is great illustration of how one believer can make a difference, we see the Apostle Paul encouraging the men he was sailing with, after a storm had hit their ship, and they feared for their lives.

*Act 27:21-26 And when they had gone a long time without food, then Paul stood up in their midst and said, “Men, you ought to have followed my advice and not to have set sail from Crete, and incurred this damage and loss. And yet now I urge you to keep up your courage, for there shall be no loss of life among you, but only of the ship. For this very night an angel of the God to whom I belong and whom I serve stood before me, saying, ‘Do not be afraid, Paul; you must stand before Caesar; and behold, God has granted you all those who are sailing with you.’ Therefore, keep up your courage, men, for I believe God, that it will turn out exactly as I have been told. But we must run aground on a certain island.”*

You gain strength, courage, and confidence by every experience in which you really stop to look fear in the face.

*2Ch 15:6-7 "...And nation was crushed by nation, and city by city, for God troubled them with every kind of distress. But you, be strong and do not lose courage, for there is reward for your work."*

The brave man is the one who masters his fears and is willing to face his problems head-on.

*Psa 3:6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people who have set themselves against me round about.*

True courage is found in virtue-love, meaning personal love for God the Father, impersonal love for all mankind, and occupation with Christ. The believer who learns to love according to God's Word is not susceptible to fear.

*1Jo 4:18 There is no fear in virtue-love; but mature love casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears is not matured in love.*

Winner believers are those who make a habit of doing what losers are uncomfortable doing. One man with courage can affect the majority around him, who are under the bondage of fear. The solution to fear is to grow up spiritually and learn the spiritual resources necessary to live a lifestyle of courage. Spiritual self-esteem and the confidence that comes with it can solve all problems related to fear.

Comfort for fearful circumstances can be found in the omnipotence of God, Rom 8:11, *"But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who dwells in you."*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 18

The Doctrine of Guilt

Philippians 2:13

03/16/03

We are now studying the Doctrine of Guilt as a part of the doctrine of The Satanic Game Plan, and the means used by the kingdom of darkness to lead believers astray.

## The Doctrine of Guilt

Point 1: Definition and Description. Guilt has three meanings:

1. The fact of being responsible for an offense or wrongdoing.
2. In legal terms, culpability for a crime or a breach of regulations.
3. Remorseful awareness of having done something wrong.

We also saw that guilt can be an *objective reality* or a *subjective experience*. The objective reality is the *fact* of being responsible for an offense or wrongdoing. Here guilt is the historical fact that a certain sin, act, or crime was committed by a certain individual. Subjectively, guilt can be experienced by the individual that has not lived up to his own expectations; it can be a feeling of responsibility or remorse for a real or imagined offense.

In its historical aspect, the guilt of sin committed will never be changed. It can not be transferred to any other person. However, the second aspect of guilt, which is an *obligation to law*, may be discharged by punishment endured, or transferred to another who, *as a substitute*, suffers the penalty for the guilty person. This is a great analogy to the Cross where our Lord Jesus Christ endured our guilt as a substitute for us. Sin makes the Pharisee and tax collector, the priest and prostitute, exactly alike, spiritually bankrupt as they stand before God. We owe God an enormous debt, far greater than we could possibly repay. Therefore, how wonderful it is to embrace that inexhaustible, immutable, and perfect salvation which the Cross of Christ affords!

*Rom 6:23 For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

*Col 2:13-14 And when you were dead in your transgressions and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He made you alive together with Him, having forgiven us all our transgressions, having canceled out the certificate of debt consisting of decrees against us and which was hostile to us; and He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross.*

By the justification received through faith in Jesus Christ, even the historical aspect of guilt is relieved beyond comprehension for those who believe. Not only is there peace with God, but He will remember no more our sins and guilt, which He has dealt with completely in the Person of His Son.

*Isa 53:5 But He was pierced through for our transgressions, He was crushed for our iniquities; the chastening for our well-being fell upon Him, and by His scourging we are healed.*

The second form of guilt is a very destructive force in the life of any believer; it destroys our confidence and happiness, and causes us to lose sight of the grace of God. There are three directions of manipulation that can result in the life of any believer under the guilt complex of sins:

1. Manipulation of *yourself* (your own guilt trip).
2. Being manipulated *by someone else* through guilt.
3. Being converted to legalism, and becoming a *manipulator of others*, a crusader for legalistic guilt.

Point 2: Discerning True Guilt from False Guilt.

*Phi 2:13 For it is God [the Holy Spirit] who is at work in you, both to will [motivation] and to work [execution] above and beyond His good pleasure.*

Whether you realize it or not, God the Holy Spirit is working within you. Without His ministry, you never have any positive changes in your life, and you will never grow. God is at work within us even when we are not filled with the Spirit. If the Holy Spirit is not controlling your soul, He also has the ministry of *conviction* to point out the changes that are necessary in your life.

We must learn to recognize the difference between true conviction and *condemnation*.

*Rom 8:1 There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.*

*Rom 4:7-8 "Blessed are those whose lawless deeds have been forgiven, and whose sins have been covered. Blessed is the man whose sin the Lord will not take into account."*

One is a true (legitimate) guilt, whereas the other is a false (deceitful) guilt. Conviction is God revealing something to you so it can be corrected, as in 2Co 7:8-10, "*For though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it; though I did regret it—for I see that that letter caused you sorrow, though only for a while—I now rejoice, not that you were made sorrowful, but that you were made sorrowful to the point of repentance; for you were made sorrowful according to the will of God, in order that you might not suffer loss in anything through us. For the sorrow that is according to the will of God produces a repentance without regret, leading to salvation; but the sorrow of the world produces death.*" Condemnation is the kingdom of darkness accusing you of being unworthy to receive blessing from God, as in Rev 12:10b, "*For the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.*" False guilt (condemnation) magnifies our sins and failures and pushes us into a subtle works program in order to make up for those sins and failures. True guilt (conviction) will always free us and give us rest, whereas false guilt will separate us from the Lord.

There are twelve factors we have noted that bring out the difference between true guilt and false guilt:

1. The tool.
2. The agent.
3. The issue (subject matter).
4. The focus.
5. The objective.
6. The orientation (approach).
7. The direction.
8. The tone.
9. The analogy.
10. The remedy.
11. The future.
12. The end state.

We have completed our study of the first six principles.

1. The tool used for conviction is the *Word of God*. The tools that are used for condemnation are *accusations and slander*.
2. The agent for conviction is usually *God's man*, the pastor-teacher, but can also be another positive believer friend. The agent for condemnation will be your *enemies*.  
*Jer 35:15 "Also I have sent to you all My servants the prophets, sending them again and again, saying: 'Turn now every man from his evil way, and amend your deeds, and do not go after other gods to worship them, then you shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your forefathers; but you have not inclined your ear or listened to Me.'"*  
*Pro 27:6 Faithful are the wounds of a friend, but deceitful are the kisses of an enemy.*
3. The issue and concern (subject matter) in conviction is the *condition of the sinner*, i.e., rescuing you. ("You need to know this. This is what God's word has to say.") It is all about your well-being. It is meant to shed light on the fact, followed by the Cross. The fact will be the *single area* of your life that needs to change.

*Mat 9:12-13 But when He heard this, He said, "It is not those who are healthy who need a physician, but those who are sick. But go and learn what this means, 'I desire compassion, and not sacrifice,' for I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners."*

The issue and concern in condemnation is a *claim against the sinner*. It is the injury itself, requiring a debt to be paid. ("You owe me.") It is someone else's agenda. An obvious example of this is the Pharisees' condemnation of the Lord Jesus Christ, and their inconsistent accusations.

*Mar 14:55-59 Now the chief priests and the whole Council kept trying to obtain testimony against Jesus to put Him to death; and they were not finding any. For many were giving false testimony against Him, and yet their testimony was not consistent. And some stood up and began to give false testimony against Him, saying, "We heard Him say, 'I will destroy this temple made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands.'" And not even in this respect was their testimony consistent.*

Condemnation obscures the truth of the Cross, claiming that there is more penalty required—culpability followed by penalty regarding *multiple offenses*.

4. The singular focus of the episode of conviction is *God*. The focus of condemnation continues to be *sin and the sinner*.

*Mat 16:23 But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."*

5. The objective of conviction is *freedom*. The objective of condemnation is *slavery*.

*Gal 2:4 But it was because of the false brethren who had sneaked in to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, in order to bring us into bondage.*

*Gal 5:1 It was for freedom that Christ set us free; therefore keep standing firm and do not be subject again to a yoke of slavery.*

*Joh 8:31-36 Jesus therefore was saying to those Jews who had believed Him, "If you abide in My word, then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." They answered Him, "We are Abraham's offspring, and have never yet been enslaved to anyone; how is it that You say, 'You shall become free'?" Jesus answered them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is the slave of sin. And the slave does not remain in the house forever; the son does remain forever. If therefore the Son shall make you free, you shall be free indeed."*

6. The orientation, or approach, of conviction is that it is said *directly to you*, and you only. The orientation of condemnation is that it is said *to others about you*.

*Mat 18:15 "And if your brother sins, go and reprove him in private; if he listens to you, you have won your brother."*

As grace-oriented believers, we need to understand that God may be at work within us through gracious criticism and conviction. We must learn to identify true guilt and false guilt—Holy Spirit conviction versus the condemnation of man.

*Heb 10:17 "And their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more."*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 19

The Doctrine of Guilt, Part 2

Hosea 5:15–6:1

03/23/03

We are continuing our study of the Doctrine of Guilt, as a part of Satan's plan to deceive the human race. By way of review, under our Definition and Description in Point 1, we defined guilt as:

1. The fact of being responsible for an offense or wrongdoing.
2. Culpability for a crime or lesser breach of regulations.
3. Remorseful awareness of having done something wrong.

As believers in the Lord Jesus Christ we know that we have peace with God, and He does not remember our sins.

There are three directions of manipulation in the life of any believer under the guilt complex of sins:

1. The manipulation of yourself (your own guilt trip).
2. Guilt used by others to manipulate you.
3. Being converted to legalism, and then becoming a manipulator of others.

Point 2, which we have already begun, is Discerning True Guilt from False Guilt. Whether you realize it or not, God the Holy Spirit is working within you, otherwise you never have any changes in your life. As believers in the Lord Jesus Christ, God is at work within us even when we are not filled with the Spirit.

Even when the Holy Spirit is not controlling your soul, He still has the ministry of conviction to reveal to you any choices and changes that need to be made. It is important to recognize the difference between legitimate *conviction* and *condemnation*. One is a true guilt; the other is a false guilt. Conviction is God revealing something to you so it can be corrected. Condemnation is the kingdom of darkness accusing you of being unworthy to receive blessing from God.

1. The tool that is used for conviction is the *Word of God*. The tools that are used for condemnation are *accusations and slander*.
2. The agent for conviction is usually *God's man*, the pastor, but can also be another positive believer friend. The agent for condemnation will be your *enemies*.
3. The issue and concern in conviction is the *condition of the sinner*, and rescuing you for your own well-being. In condemnation there is a *claim against the sinner*. It is the injury itself, requiring a debt to be paid.
4. The singular focus of the episode of conviction is *God*, whereas the focus of condemnation continues to be *sin and the sinner*.
5. The objective of conviction is *freedom* whereas the objective of condemnation is *slavery*.
6. The orientation of conviction is that it is said *directly to you*, and you only. The orientation of condemnation is that it is said *to others about you*, and said to you indirectly.
7. The direction of the engagement in true guilt is *toward God* for washing and renovation, and *away from the sin nature* (repentance); this is conviction.

*Isa 55:6-7 Seek the LORD while He may be found; call upon Him while He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts; and let him return to the LORD, and He will have compassion on him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon.*

In condemnation it is false guilt *toward sin*, sticking your face in your vomit, forcing you to keep staring at your shortcomings, and causing you to hide from God.

*Gen 3:7-10 Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings. And they*



*heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden. Then the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?" And he said, "I heard the sound of Thee in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself."*

An excellent illustration of this attitude is Job's wife in Job 2:9, "*Then his wife said to him, 'Do you still hold fast your integrity? Curse God and die!'*"

8. The tone of conviction is generally quiet, resolute, focused, *calm confrontation*, as demonstrated by the prophet Nathan when he faces King David in 2Sa 12. Nathan presents the conviction in a dogmatic but gracious manner and then returns home to mind his own business, rather than spreading the news to everyone he knows.

*2Sa 12:7a,13,15 Nathan then said to David, "You are the man!"... Then David said to Nathan, "I have sinned against the LORD." And Nathan said to David, "The LORD also has taken away your sin; you shall not die."... So Nathan went to his house.*

The tone of condemnation is generally a loud, repetitive, chaotic, multi-headed, *emotional attack*.

*Mar 15:3 The chief priests began to accuse Him harshly.*

*Luk 15:1-2 Now all the tax collectors and prostitutes were coming near to Him to listen to Him. And both Pharisees and scribes were constantly complaining about it, and said, "This man welcomes prostitutes and dines with them."*

9. The analogy for conviction is the *hospital* where we go to heal, whereas the analogy for condemnation is the *prison* where we hurt.

The Hospital:

*Hos 5:15-6:1 I will go away and return to My place until they acknowledge their guilt and seek My face; in their affliction they will earnestly seek Me. "Come, let us return to the LORD. For He has torn us, but He will heal us; He has wounded us, but He will bandage us."*  
*Joh 10:10 "The thief comes only to steal, and kill, and destroy; I came that they might have life, and might have it abundantly."*

The Prison:

*Mat 18:28-30 "But that slave went out and found one of his fellow slaves who owed him a hundred denarii; and he seized him and began to choke him, saying, 'Pay back what you owe.' So his fellow slave fell down and began to entreat him, saying, 'Have patience with me and I will repay you.' He was unwilling however, but went and threw him in prison until he should pay back what was owed."*

10. The remedy conviction seeks is three-fold:

1. *Rebound*, acknowledgement to God.
2. *Repentance*, which is to change your mind.
3. To develop a *reliance on God's power* to change things (through the filling of the Holy Spirit and Bible doctrine).

*2Ch 7:14 and My people who are called by My name humble themselves and pray, and seek My face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven, will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.*

*Psa 119:28-29 My soul weeps because of grief; strengthen me according to Thy word. Remove the false way from me, and graciously grant me Thy law.*

The remedy that condemnation seeks is:

*Punishment.*

Changing or modifying your *behavior* (human good, religion).

Manipulation into *doing what your attacker wants*.

*Gal 4:17 They eagerly seek you, not commendably, but they wish to shut you out, in order that you may seek them.*

*Gal 6:12 Those who desire to make a good showing in the flesh try to compel you to be circumcised, simply that they may not be persecuted for the cross of Christ.*

11. The future outlook for conviction is *hope* where we “think the best, hope all things.”

*1Co 13:3-7 Love is patient, love is kind, and is not jealous; love does not brag and is not arrogant, does not act unbecomingly; it does not seek its own, is not provoked, does not take into account a wrong suffered, does not rejoice in unrighteousness, but rejoices with the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.*

The future outlook for condemnation is *despair* where we are told and convinced, “You’ll never change.”

*Mat 23:3-4 “And they tie up heavy loads, and lay them on men’s shoulders; but they themselves are unwilling to move them with so much as a finger.”*

12. The state of mind at the end of conviction is *peaceful, relieved, and grateful*, resulting in more *energy* for your spiritual life, and more *motivation* to stick with God’s plan and Word.

*Luk 19:10 “For the Son of Man has come to seek and to save that which was lost.”*

However, there is *no end* to condemnation. The state of mind continues to be *shame, nervousness, insecurity, conflicted mentality, weariness, a vague sense of unease, and a frantic need for works and rituals.*

*Pro 27:15 A constant dripping on a day of steady rain and a contentious woman are alike.*

We need to understand that God may be at work within us through this criticism and conviction. We need to identify true guilt and false guilt, Holy Spirit conviction versus the condemnation of man.

Point 3: The causes of false guilt. It is who we are, not what we do, that produces guilt.

*Rom 7:23-24 but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind, and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members.*

*Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death?*

Guilt can be devastating when not handled properly. It can start at an early age, with many children being brought up with condemning guilt and therefore having difficulty handling Holy Spirit conviction when it comes. Guilt can reproduce itself into a greater condemnation, which eventually destroys the confidence and personality of a child. As the rebuke continues, the child begins to feel inferior to others; he loses confidence, and begins to search for answers. The statements that we make to one another, including our children, are very powerful, Pro 18:21, “*Death and life are in the power of the tongue.*”

We all have areas of doubts, insecurities, and uncertainties in our lives because we all possess an old sin nature. It is never wise to compare ourselves with others. Comparison only produces feelings of guilt and inadequacy in a person’s life. We cannot afford to give in to someone who is being used to guilt us into things that will take us away from doctrine. For many, every reproach or correction arouses a feeling of guilt even in the critic as much as in the one being criticized.

1. Many parents use guilt as a method of disciplining and correcting their children, Eph 6:4.
2. Satan accuses God’s people to try to make them feel guilty, Rev 12:10.
3. Sin can make a person feel so guilty that they hide from God and separate, Gen 3:7-10. People become overwhelmed with guilt because of past sins they have committed. A single instance where a person has acted rashly and said thoughtless words can result in tremendous guilt and hand-wringing afterwards. As William Wordsworth said, “*From the body of one guilty deed a thousand ghostly fears and haunting thoughts proceed.*”
4. Being too concerned about what others might say produces guilt, Joh 12:42-43.

5. Receiving something you did not earn or deserve produces guilt. We even become double-minded in that we adopt the “elder brother syndrome” (Luk 15:21-30) *against ourselves* when we receive unmerited favor.
6. Guilt also results from being pressured to do something you do not want to do, Act 20:21-26, Pro 25:26.
7. People experience guilt due to their feelings of inadequacy or some type of inferiority complex. We must remember that adequacy in any area of life only comes through God’s power, 2Co 2:14-16, 3:4-6.

There are even many more causes for guilt, which we will study in more detail. It is vital to our Christian walk that we are educated and prepared against the subtle deceptions of guilt, so that we are not experientially separated from the grace plan of God.

*Mat 11:28-30 “Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My load is light.”*

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 20

The Doctrine of Guilt, Part 3

Romans 8:34

03/30/03

After studying the definition of guilt and how to discern true Holy Spirit *conviction* from *false guilt* sponsored by the kingdom of darkness, we have now begun Point 3 in our study of the Doctrine of Guilt.

Point 3: The Causes of False Guilt. It is who we are, not what we do, that produces guilt. Regardless of how we have failed, Bible doctrine in our soul and understanding grace will protect us from condemnation.

*Rom 7:23-24 But I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind, and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members.*

*Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death?*

Guilt is devastating when we do not respond with divine viewpoint. The conversations we have with others can have a very powerful effect, Pro 18:21, "Death and life are in the power of the tongue." We must also guard against comparing ourselves with others, 2Co 10:12, "For we are not bold to class or compare ourselves with some of those who commend themselves; but when they measure themselves by themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they are without understanding."

In the account of Martha and her sister Mary in Luk 10, it was Martha who had the practical temperament and who was occupying herself with the housework, but it was Mary who had a taste for things of the Spirit and who sat at the feet of Jesus to listen to Him.

*Luk 10:38-42 Now as they were traveling along, He entered a certain village; and a woman named Martha welcomed Him into her home. And she had a sister called Mary, who moreover was listening to the Lord's word, seated at His feet. But Martha was distracted with all her preparations; and she came up to Him, and said, "Lord, do You not care that my sister has left me to do all the serving alone? Then tell her to help me." But the Lord answered and said to her, "Martha, Martha, you are worried and bothered about so many things; but only a few things are necessary, really only one, for Mary has chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her."*

We must not give in to anyone who is being used to manipulate us into situations that will take us away from Bible doctrine and grace.

There are numerous causes for guilt and condemnation, such as these 12 factors which we have begun studying:

1. Many parents use guilt as a method of disciplining and correcting their children, Eph 6:4.
2. Satan accuses God's people to try to make them feel guilty, Rev 12:10.
3. Sin can make a person feel so guilty that they hide from God and separate, Gen 3:7-10.
4. Being too concerned about what others might say produces guilt, Joh 12:42-43.
5. Receiving something you did not earn or deserve produces guilt. We can even become double-minded if we adopt the "elder brother syndrome" (Luk 15:21-30) against ourselves when we receive unmerited favor.
6. Guilt also results from being pressured to do something you do not want to do, Act 20:21-26, Pro 25:26.
7. People experience guilt due to their feelings of inadequacy or some type of inferiority complex. We must remember that adequacy in any area of life only comes through God's power, 2Co 2:14-16, 3:4-6.
8. Many people cannot accept their weaknesses and this causes them to feel guilty about themselves. The Apostle Paul deals with this problem in 1Co 12:8-10 and 1Ti 1:12-16.

9. It is possible to experience guilt not only from the evil that we do, but also from the good that we neglect to do, Jam 4:17.
10. Lack of doctrinal knowledge causes guilt, as seen in Hos 4:1-6. The false gospel causes a curse, guilt, and shame, Gal 1:6-9. Cults and other false teachers use guilt to manipulate and control their congregations. People who are weighed down by a guilty conscience are easy targets for false teachers, 2Ti 3:1-6.
11. Survivor guilt, which Paul addresses in Rom 9:1-3, includes feeling bad because you have a better life than someone else. People who survive a serious accident or disaster, in which others were killed or injured, very often feel guilt because they are better off than the others, and we see King David facing this in 2Sa 18:33. People who are victims of abuse often feel guilt and shame for these terrible actions over which they had no control.
12. Perfectionism causes guilt by seeking and striving to meet strict standards and expectations from yourself and others (always thinking, "I should," "I shouldn't," etc.). The Jewish ruler speaking to our Lord in Luk 18:18-24 is an example of what happens to those who place perfect standards on themselves, and then realize they can not fulfill them.

*Luk 18:18-24 And a certain ruler questioned Him, saying, "Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?" And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good except God alone. You know the commandments, 'Do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not bear false witness, honor your father and mother.'" And he said, "All these things I have kept from my youth." [As we know, no one except our Lord could ever keep the Law perfectly.] And when Jesus heard this, He said to him, "One thing you still lack; sell all that you possess, and distribute it to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me." But when he had heard these things, he became very sad; for he was extremely rich.*

In many cases, people will be used to put us under condemnation so that we will not follow the ministry of the Holy Spirit, and no one ever came under more attacks from guilt and condemnation than our Lord Jesus Christ during the incarnation.

*Luk 2:46-49 And it came about that after three days they found Him [the Lord Jesus Christ at age 12] in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both listening to them, and asking them questions. And all who heard Him were amazed at His understanding and His answers. And when they saw Him, they were astonished; and His mother said to Him, "Son, why have You treated us this way? Behold, Your father and I have been anxiously looking for You." And He said to them, "Why is it that you were looking for Me? Did you not know that I had to be in My Father's house?"*

The Lord discerned that this was illegitimate guilt directed toward Him to produce condemnation. The conviction He had from His heavenly Father was greater than the condemnation directed toward Him from His earthly mother. It was more important to Jesus to pay attention to His conviction from God rather than the condemnation from man. Although we can perhaps understand how His mother felt, it is important that we evaluate this for what it is—illegitimate guilt based on human viewpoint.

Just as we saw earlier in Luk 10, there will always be the Martha's, criticizing the Mary's for laying aside the details of life in order to hear the Word of God. This is the manifestation of *false guilt* from satanic accusations aimed at condemning us, whereas the Holy Spirit's *conviction* states that we must be concerned with our Father's business. The believer must become secure and confident in his relationship with God.

*Rom 8:34 Who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is He who died, yes, rather who was raised, who is at the right hand of God, who also intercedes for us.*

The only guilt the believer should ever experience is the conviction that comes from God the Holy Spirit. True guilt from above is actually conviction, and will always offer us freedom and a way of

recovery, but never condemnation. Satan's policy is to lead us on a guilt trip, so that when godly conviction comes into play, the believer will be confused as to which is conviction and which is condemnation.

*1Co 2:14-16 But a natural man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised. But he who is spiritual appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no man. For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he should instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ [Bible doctrine].*

*Gal 4:6 And because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, crying, "Abba! Father!"*

We must be very careful that we do not set ourselves up as the final judge in the lives of others. That is the position of Christ alone. These are the natural-minded who have fallen into the satanic trap of Gen 3, thinking that they know good and evil. The natural-minded man does not possess the ability to pass judgment, yet he does so anyway, and ends up making an evaluation with few facts and no discernment! As the Lord said to Job, they need to condemn others so that they may appear more righteous.

*Job 40:8 "Will you really annul My judgment? Will you condemn Me that you may be justified?"*

Spiritual self-sustainment and proper discernment can only come through learning, believing, and using Bible doctrine on a daily basis. Guilt is a problem that very few have ever solved.

**Point 4:** The Results of Succumbing to False Guilt. Insecurity, inferiority, and emotional breakdown in the soul can all be traced to a subtle form of guilt. *Guilt separates!* Guilt only weakens us and tears us down.

The believer must understand two basic doctrines—the doctrine of justification (we are declared "not guilty" and perfectly righteous) and the doctrine of eternal security (our salvation is eternally secure and can never be lost). Our relationship with the Lord can *never be changed*, but our fellowship with Him can be hindered by guilt.

*Rom 8:38-39 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

When a believer lacks confidence in the spiritual realm, satanic accusations will interfere and interrupt the believer's spiritual progress. Suddenly the believer "feels" rejected by the Lord.

*Eph 2:13 But now in Christ Jesus you who formerly were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ.*

There are many who believe that God is angry at them for something that they have done. However, God's relationship with us is not based upon what we do; His relationship with us is based on what Jesus Christ accomplished on the Cross.

It is not our own instability that matters; it is the perfect faithfulness and immutability of our God.

*Mal 3:6 "For I, the LORD, do not change; therefore you, O sons of Jacob [thieves and deceivers], are not consumed."*

Guilt produces fear and shame, and causes us to hide from the very One that can give us victory over our guilt, as it did to Adam and the Woman in Gen 3:7-10. The real problem believers face *is not sin*, but what to do with the guilt that arises from sin. Guilt takes us from grace orientation to works orientation, and very often leads us into religion, which is nothing more than man trying to please God by what man does. Our Lord knows what is in man, and He will not accept anything our flesh can do.

*Joh 2:23-25 Now when He was in Jerusalem at the Passover, during the feast, many believed in His name, beholding His signs which He was doing. But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting Himself to them, for He knew all men, and because He did not need anyone to bear witness concerning man for He Himself knew what was in man.*

Under religion, you will find yourself on a subtle works program, trying to please everyone around you, when the opinions of others should not matter to us, Luk 6:26, 1Pe 4:14. Under grace, you will discover the blessings of Act 20:35, *"It is more blessed to give than to receive."*

In Mat 26 we see a failure in Peter's life that could have caused him tremendous guilt. *Mat 26:32-35,69-75 But Peter answered and said to Him, "Even though all may fall away because of You, I will never fall away." Jesus said to him, "Truly I say to you that this very night, before a cock crows, you shall deny Me three times." Peter said to Him, "Even if I have to die with You, I will not deny You." All the disciples said the same thing too.*

*...Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard, and a certain servant-girl came to him and said, "You too were with Jesus the Galilean." But he denied it before them all, saying, "I do not know what you are talking about." And when he had gone out to the gateway, another servant-girl saw him and said to those who were there, "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth." And again he denied it with an oath, "I do not know the man." And a little later the bystanders came up and said to Peter, "Surely you too are one of them; for the way you talk gives you away." Then he began to curse and swear, "I do not know the man!" And immediately a cock crowed. And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had said, "Before a cock crows, you will deny Me three times." And he went out and wept bitterly.*

We are all continually under the threat of some "cock's crow" that will cause us embarrassment. You can get a lot more out of most people when they are under guilt and manipulation than when they are under freedom and grace. The religious works program continues to separate the believer from God experientially because God can not accept our human good, Psa 39:5b, Isa 64:6, Rom 8:8. When faced with guilt, an excellent principle to remember is 1Sa 15:22, *"To obey is better than sacrifice."* God is not after some form of penance or restitution on our part; what He desires is for us to understand and live by grace (Rom 8:1), and "be anxious for nothing" (Phi 4:6). Guilt will only separate us from the gifts God has for us.

# THE ANGELIC CONFLICT, PART 21

The Doctrine of Guilt Part 4

Ephesians 2:1-10

04/06/03

We have been studying The Results of Succumbing to False Guilt under Point 4 in our continuing study of the Doctrine of Guilt.

Guilt separates us from the grace of God and tears us down. Therefore, the believer must understand two basic doctrines—the doctrine of justification (we are declared “not guilty” and perfectly righteous) and the doctrine of eternal security (our salvation is eternally secure and can never be lost). Our relationship with the Lord can never be changed, but our fellowship with Him can be hindered by guilt.

*Rom 8:38-39 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

When a believer lacks confidence in the spiritual realm, satanic accusations will interfere and interrupt the believer’s spiritual progress. However, the Lord never changes, and He will never reject His child.

*Eph 2:13 But now in Christ Jesus you who formerly were far off have been brought near by the blood of Christ.*

*Heb 13:5b For He Himself has said, “I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you.”*

Unfortunately, there are many believers who are convinced that God is angry at them for something that they have done. However, God’s relationship with us is based on the perfect finished work of Jesus Christ on the Cross, and not on our own pitiful attempts to please Him. It is not who and what we are that matters; it is the perfect faithfulness and immutability of our God.

*Rom 7:18 For I know that nothing good dwells in me [in my flesh].*

*Job 8:5-6 “If you would seek God and implore the compassion of the Almighty, if you are pure and upright, surely now He would rouse Himself for you and restore your righteous estate.*

Believers must understand that the Lord Jesus Christ died for their sin, but also that He died for their guilt. When people are plagued by guilt, they look for others to whom they can transfer their guilt.

*Pro 17:15 He who justifies the wicked, and he who condemns the righteous, both of them alike are an abomination to the LORD.*

The end result is that they become more and more guilty themselves.

*Jer 17:9 “The heart is more deceitful than all else and is desperately sick; who can understand it?”*

Point 5: Satan uses guilt to manipulate the believer into evil. If believers would only realize that their most serious problem is coming under the influence of evil instead of the influence of doctrine, they would be delivered once and for all from the sin issue. Our problem is not sin because sin has been dealt with at the Cross by the Lord Jesus Christ; our problem in this life is evil.

Evil is a policy and program of Satan and his kingdom that motivates the believer to develop a false sense of morality. It is legalism, self-righteousness, emotionalism, and religion. The issue that Satan is concerned with is not the sin issue, but creatures operating in their own power rather than divine power. The believer can be motivated by guilt to perform works in his own power, and guilt can manipulate the believer into arrogance. Unfortunately, most believers today function under the



energy of arrogance, emotionalism, guilt, condemnation, fear, worry, or revenge motivation, all of which is evil and must be overcome by the power of Bible doctrine.

*Psa 140:2 ...who devise evil things in their hearts; they continually stir up wars.*

There are several important factors we must learn concerning evil.

1. Evil resides in the heart and must be dealt with.
2. Deliverance from evil results from respecting the Lord.
3. Those under the influence of evil will be under the influence of deception. When you are most under the influence of evil, you are least likely to realize it.
4. A believer who is positive toward doctrine will turn away from evil no matter how many of his best friends or closest family members are involved with it.

*Pro 14:16 A wise man is cautious and turns away from evil, but a fool is arrogant and careless.*

5. Believers who become involved with evil go astray from the Lord.

*Pro 14:22 Will they not go astray who devise evil? But kindness and truth will be to those who devise good.*

6. A wise believer has nothing to do with those influenced by evil.

*Pro 22:3 The prudent sees the evil and hides himself, but the naive go on, and are punished for it.*

*1Co 15:33 Do not be deceived: "Evil companions corrupt good morals."*

7. The wise believer goes to the house of God to listen; the evil believer goes to sacrifice.

*Ecc 5:1 Guard your steps as you go to the house of God and draw near to listen rather than to offer the sacrifice of fools; for they do not know they are doing evil.*

8. Bitterness and jealousy result from evil and reside in the hearts of those under their influence.

*Jer 4:18 "Your ways and your deeds have brought these things to you. This is your evil. How bitter! How it has touched your heart!"*

9. Character, integrity, and honesty protect the believer from being influenced by evil.

*Mat 5:37 "But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil."*

10. Evil thoughts produce evil works no matter how good the works appear to be on the outside.

*Mat 12:35 "The good man brings out of his good treasure what is good; and the evil man brings out of his evil treasure what is evil."*

*1Th 5:22 Abstain from every form of evil.*

**Point 6:** The solution to guilt is grace orientation. Evil is the policy of Satan, whereas grace is the policy of God, Heb 3:12, "Take care, brethren, that there not be in any one of you an evil, unbelieving heart that falls away from the living God." Just as grace and doctrine represent the genius of God in relationship to the human race, so evil represents the genius of Satan in relation to the human race. The soul is the battleground of every believer in the Church-age, in this intensified stage of the angelic conflict. As we have seen, divine viewpoint is thinking doctrine, which glorifies Christ; human viewpoint is thinking evil, which dishonors Christ.

Recovery from sin is instantaneous through the use of 1Jo 1:9, but recovery from evil takes a long time through the perception, metabolization, and application of Bible doctrine. The origin of evil is Satan's genius in devising a system to oppose God and to give creatures credit rather than the Lord. The goal of Satan's plan is to beat Christ to the Millennium with his own production of a perfect world.

*Psa 84:10 For a day in Your courts is better than a thousand days in the cosmic system. I would rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God than dwell in the tents of evil.*

*Psa 121:7 The LORD will protect you from all evil; He will keep your soul.*

The real issue that the believer has to face, where Satan uses guilt to deceive the believer, is grace versus evil. The issue before the Royal Family is this: *Are you influenced by doctrine, or are you influenced by evil?*

Evil as Satan's policy is the means by which false doctrine is inculcated. The arrogance of legalism is the vanity of the "unique experience" and erroneous emphasis on human achievement. This begins with self-righteousness, which produces the arrogance of legalism, and the Apostle Paul deals with extensively in *Galatians* and *Romans*.

When dealing with guilt, we have seen that neither our genetic heritage nor our childhood is ever an excuse for failure to follow God's plan or the way our life has turned out. As believers we cannot allow ourselves to be occupied with past failures, except to learn from them—never to blame others for them, Phi 3:13-15. *Past failures must never become present handicaps*. In eternity past, God provided His solution for our guilt, and that solution is grace. The essential element for living in freedom from guilt is *understanding grace* (Eph 2:1-10).

*Joh 8:32 "You shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."*

*Tit 2:11-12 For the grace of God has appeared, bringing salvation to all men, instructing us to deny ungodliness and worldly desires and to live sensibly, righteously and godly in the present age.*

*Isa 61:1 The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me, because the LORD has anointed me To bring good news to the afflicted; He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to captives, and freedom to prisoners.*

Never forget that our Lord Jesus Christ "bore our sins in His body on the tree," and as 1Pe 2:24 says, "He is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only but also for the sins of the whole world."

The Lord only wants us to name and cite our sins (1Jo 1:9) and move forward to what lies ahead.

*Psa 51:4 "Against Thee, Thee only, I have sinned, and done what is evil in Thy sight."*

In God's plan, God must give and we must be the receivers, and grace makes it very difficult for us to take credit for anything at any time.

Sadly, many believers are so guilty about the mistakes of yesterday that they never enjoy the mercy and compassion of the Lord today!

*2Co 5:21 He made Him who knew no sin to be a sin offering on our behalf, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.*

Grace is the Person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ, the flashing forth of grace. He came to restore all that was lost in the fall. It is God's grace being manifested to us that brings Him glory in the angelic conflict. God does some of His best work on us when we are most aware of our hopelessness and unworthiness.

Remember that anything God does results in His glorification. God does not depend on us for His pleasure or His glory. God is not glorified by our system of human works. He is glorified by meeting our every need.

*Psa 50:15 "Call upon Me in the day of trouble; I shall rescue you, and you will glorify Me."*

*2Pe 3:17-18 You therefore, beloved, knowing this beforehand, be on your guard lest, being carried away by the error of unprincipled men, you fall from your own steadfastness, but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.*

This concludes our study of the Doctrine of Guilt.

# THE MOST IMPORTANT SIGN FOR THE CHURCH

Luke 17:20

04/13/03

We have now noted the Satanic Game Plan, and are continuing our study of Rev 12:1 and the Israeli-Arab conflict: *"And a great sign appeared in heaven, a woman [Israel] clothed with the sun [Jacob], and the moon under her feet [the wives of Jacob], and on her head a crown of twelve stars [the twelve patriarchs and twelve tribes of Israel]."* These twelve tribes are Reuben, Simeon, Levi, Judah, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph, Benjamin, Dan, Naphtali, Gad, and Asher.

*Rev 12:2-5 And she [Israel] was with child [the virgin pregnancy]; and she cried out [the many Jewish Holocausts throughout human history], being in labor and in pain to give birth [longing for deliverance from this anti-Semitism]. And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon [Satan] having seven heads and ten horns, [the revived Roman empire of the Tribulation and the ecumenical religion, which is being formed today], and on his heads were seven diadems [crowns]. And his tail [Satan's power] swept away a third of the stars of heaven [the prehistoric revolution in Heaven, in which one third of the angels followed Satan in the prehistoric angelic conflict], and He [God] threw them to the earth [in the middle of the Tribulation]. And the dragon [Satan] stood before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth [to prevent the virgin birth of Christ], so that when she gave birth he might devour [destroy] her child [the humanity of Christ]. And she gave birth to a son, a male child [our Lord Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron [during the Millennium]; and her child [Jesus Christ] was caught up to God ["harapazo" refers to the ascension, the doctrine of Christology pertaining to the transfer of our Lord's true humanity from planet earth to the third heaven in a resurrection body, Act 2:34.] and to His throne [the session, the doctrine of Christology pertaining to the glorification of our Lord's humanity at the right hand of the Father, Eph 2:6.] And the woman [true Israel, Jews saved during the Tribulation period] fled into the wilderness where she had a place prepared by God [for refuge], so that there she might be nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days [the last half of the Tribulation and the time of Satan's desperation].*

We can even see in current day events what Satan is trying to do to stop God from fulfilling His promises to the Jews. If we are to be successful in our spiritual warfare, we must evaluate where we stand in relationship to such passages as Eph 6:11, *"Pick up and put on the full armor from God, that you may be able to hold your ground against the schemes [strategies] of the devil."*

*Phi 1:29 Because to you it has been graciously given with reference concerning Christ, not only to believe in Him, but also to suffer on behalf of Him.*

Again, we read in Rev 12:1, *"And a great sign appeared in heaven..."* The word "sign" here is a reference to the anti-Semitism seen in verses 3 and 4, and the first part of this sign deals with Satan himself. Satan is the author of all anti-Semitism, and any Christian who gets taken in by anti-Semitism is described in Phi 3 as an enemy of the Cross. We must remain spiritually oriented and remember Eph 6:12, *"Because our struggle is not against blood [people's souls] and flesh [their old sin nature]."* The issue in the spiritual life is not an evil, vicious coward in Iraq; the issue is understanding your true enemy.

The second sign in verse 3 begins with the sign of a dragon, Rev 12:3, *"And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon [Satan]."* The Greek word "semeion," translated "sign," means a sign, wonder, miracle, or something that many people see and draw conclusions from. When we see a sign, we have to decide where the sign comes from, and whether it is on God's side or Satan's, because Satan has his own signs, Rev 13:11-13.

God used signs throughout the Bible to speak to the Jews just as He uses the “signs of the times” or *historical trends* to speak to His people today. The Bible says in 1Co 1:22, “*For indeed Jews ask for signs, and Greeks search for wisdom.*” Signs were given to the Jews, historical trends are given to the church.

Circumcision is a sign to the Jews that they are a new race, Gen 17:10-11, Rom 4:11. The Passover was given as a sign of the Cross, Exo 12:7-13. The Sabbath was given as a sign of the rest God’s people should have, Exo 31:13-17, Eze 20:12. The Word of God was given to the Jews as sign in Deu 6:4-8. Ultimately, we have the sign of His death, burial, and resurrection, Mat 12:39-41, 16:4; Joh 2:19. During His lifetime, our Lord performed hundreds of signs, Joh 20:30, “*Many other signs therefore Jesus also performed in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book.*” The Jews have been given enough signs, Mat 12:38-40, “*Then some of the scribes and Pharisees answered Him, saying, ‘Teacher, we want to see a sign from You.’ But He answered and said to them, ‘An evil and adulterous generation craves for a sign; and yet no sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet, for just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster, so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.’”* What our Lord said in Luk 17:20 has a direct application to us in the Church: “*Now having been questioned by the Pharisees as to when the kingdom of God was coming, He answered them and said, ‘The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be observed; nor will they say, ‘Look, here it is!’ or ‘There it is!’ For behold, the kingdom of God is in your midst.’”*

We must not get so occupied with the signs of the times that we forget the sign that matters the most, the power of the Cross and our personal identification with the Lord’s suffering, 1Co 1:22-29. As you continue in the plan of God, “*the more you grow with your relationship in God, the smaller you will become.*” As our Lord said in Mat 11:28-29, “*Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you shall find rest for your souls.*”

Holiness is the product of grace, and God gives grace only to the humble. God has a plan to shatter our “strength of self,” but it takes humility to accept that plan. What keeps most churches and believers from prospering spiritually is that they have not found God through His Word, 2Ti 3:7, “*Always learning and never able to come to the true knowledge of the truth.*” They are too wrapped up in the details of life, such as current events. They are distracted from the reality that the kingdom of God is in their midst, not in fame and wealth or in the events in the “Middle East,” but *in their midst*—within. True experiential holiness, or dedication and devotion to God, comes from seeking the glory of God, Joh 5:44, “*How can you believe, when you receive glory from one another, and you do not seek the glory that is from the one and only God?”*

If we are concerned about displaying our spirituality to impress people, seeking honor and recognition from others, and still living to appear righteous or special or “spiritual” before people, can we honestly say we are walking with the Lord Jesus Christ, picking up our cross, and living the spiritual life? We know we are relating correctly to God when our hunger for His glory causes us to forsake the praise of men.

It is vital to understand that our Lord did not condemn sinners; He condemned hypocrites. A hypocrite is one who excuses his own sin while condemning the sins of another. He is not merely “two-faced”; we all fall into that at times. A hypocrite is one who *refuses to admit* he is at times two-faced, thereby pretending a righteousness that he fails to live in; he does not discern his hypocrisy and cannot perceive flaws within himself. Therefore, since he seeks no mercy, he has no mercy to give; since he is always under God’s judgment, judging is what comes through him. We cannot remain hypocrites and find holiness. The first step we truly take toward experiential sanctification is to admit we are not as holy as we would like to appear. Then “the kingdom of God is in your midst” begins to become a reality. This first step is called humility.

If we desire to know God, we must learn His attitude, which is found passages like Pro 3:33-34, *“The curse of the Lord is on the house of the wicked, but He blesses the dwelling of the righteous. Though He scoffs at the scoffers, yet He gives grace to the afflicted.”* He resists the proud, but His grace is drawn to the humble. Humility brings grace to our need, and grace alone can change our hearts. Humility, therefore, is the “substructure” of transformation; it is the basis of all virtues. At some phase in our lives, we will be confronted with the flaws in our hearts and the double-mindedness that resides there.

The Holy Spirit reveals our sinfulness, not to condemn us, but to establish humility and deepen the knowledge of our personal need for grace. It is at this crossroad that humble believers and hypocrites are revealed. Those who become dedicated and serious in their relationship with God see their need and appeal to the grace of God for deliverance. Hypocrites, in seeing their sin, weakness, and failure to fulfill the predesigned plan of God, excuse it and remain intact in their arrogance. Though all believers must eventually stand at this crossroads, very few accept the voice of truth; very few will walk in humility toward holiness and experience the kingdom of God in their midst.

Spiritual virtue begins with our determined refusal to hide from the condition of our hearts. If we are not enlightened to the depravity of our old sin nature, we become “Christian Pharisees” and hypocrites, full of contempt and self-righteousness. Every time we judge another Christian, we do so with an attitude of self-righteousness. Each time we criticize another believer or church, contempt is the motive behind our words. The irony in Christianity is that so many churches look upon each other with identical attitudes of superiority.

Even in times of spiritual success, we must delight in our weakness, knowing all strength is the product of God’s grace, 2Co 12:9-10. Meekness must become our way of life. Like the Lord Jesus Christ, we must delight in becoming “lowly in heart.”

Hypocrites love to judge; it makes them feel superior. Many zealous but proud Christians have failed to experience the kingdom of God because they presumed they were called to judge others. The Lord Jesus Christ did not come to condemn the world but to save the world. Judging after the flesh is the product of a carnal mind, 2Co 5:16. On the other hand, it takes the loving faithfulness of our Lord to redeem and save. One act of His love revealed through us will do more to warm cold hearts than the sum of all our pompous criticisms.

The Lord said in Mat 7:5, *“You hypocrite, first take the log out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to take the speck out of your brother’s eye.”* We will never become spiritual by criticizing others, nor is anyone brought nearer to God through finding fault! If we are honestly pursuing our sanctification, we will soon discover we have no time for judging others. Indeed, being in need of mercy, we will look eagerly for opportunities to be merciful to others. Scripture tells us that Jesus judged men in certain situations, but His motive was always to save. His love was perfectly committed to the one He judged. If you still insist on finding fault, beware—our Lord’s standard of judgment is high, Joh 8:7, *“He who is without sin among you, let him be the first to throw a stone.”* Remember, Jesus Christ did not condemn sinners, He condemned hypocrites. This is the humility we are seeking.

Now that we have seen what our most important sign is, and the results of pursuing that sign, Rev 12:3 should have more meaning for us: *“And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems.”* The Greek phrase reads: *“drakon [dragon] puros [red] megas [great].”* The word “*drakon*” is used exclusively in the book of *Revelation*, 13 times, to depict the devil. It is a synonym of the word “*ophis*,” translated “snake” or “serpent.” In the book of *Revelation* it always refers to Satan, and it has a fascinating origin. It should be noted that “*drakon*” was used in attic Greek for religious service because snake worship was practiced at Delphi and other places. The priestess who actually handled the snakes was called in the Greek, “*Puthon*,” the origin of the English word “python,” the name of one of the great “constrictors” (snakes that crush their prey). In Rev 12:3, the *drakon* referred to a snake who can see clearly,

and the snake who clearly saw the issue was the snake who became the woman's pet in the Garden. He persuaded the woman by appealing to her source of vanity and arrogance. The dragon (serpent) saw the issue clearly. He saw that he could not attack the man directly, so he got to the man through the woman.

We do not actually know our enemy's real name; in the angelic conflict he is called by the titles "Satan" or "the devil." His title in the Hebrew is "*ha Satan*," which means an adversary, or an attorney who slanders and gets away with it through a legal loophole. In the Greek, his title is *diabolos* (translated "devil"), which means essentially the same thing—an adversary, an attorney in opposition in law, or a slanderer. Satan constantly brings accusations against believers into the Supreme Court of Heaven, according to Zec 3:1; Rev 12:10; Job 1:11, 2:5. Apparently Satan does not realize the extent of the *unlimited atonement* and all that the Father accomplished on the Cross-through His Son.

Satan even accuses believers today before the throne of God. We read in Rev 12:10b, in the middle of the Tribulation period, "*The accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.*" While the devil persecutes believers on earth, he prosecutes believers in heaven. As long as believers are making positive decisions toward doctrine, the god of this world, Satan, will put pressure on us here on earth, and he will also go to heaven and prosecute us. When Satan makes accusations against us, our Lord Jesus Christ acts as our Defense Attorney and bases His defense on the doctrine of *propitiation*, which refers to the satisfaction of God the Father with the work of Christ on the Cross. The Apostle John said in 1Jo 2:1, "*My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate [a Defense Attorney] with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.*"

The moment you accepted Christ as Savior, you retained the services of the greatest barrister and defender of all time, our Lord Jesus Christ, and He represents you *personally* in the court of heaven. He is your Defense Attorney. The basis for our defense is found in 1Jo 2:2, "*And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world.*"

Propitiation means that God is satisfied with the work of Jesus Christ on the Cross for your past, present, and future. All the sins of the world, past, present, and future, were never imputed to us for judgment, but to our Lord on the Cross. This is why we read in Joh 19:30, "*When Jesus therefore had received the sour wine, He said, 'It is finished!' And He bowed His head, and gave up His spirit.*" After being judged for our sins, the Lord said, "*Tetelestai!*" After bearing our sins, Jesus Christ was still very much alive, as we can see when He makes this fantastic declaration, "*Tetelestai!*" It literally means, "finished in the past with the result that it *stands finished forever.*"

The only condition for eternal life is non-meritorious personal faith in Jesus Christ, whose substitutionary spiritual death on the Cross provided all the efficacious work for salvation. There is nothing we can add to it, now or ever. Eternal salvation is a free gift, compatible with God's policy of grace and attained by faith alone in Christ alone. By adding anything to faith as a means of salvation, man is in competition with God, and that is blasphemous. If we add any of our own works or merit, we cannot be saved; we can only be saved by grace through faith.

# PASSOVER WEEK

2 Corinthians 3:15-16

04/20/03

Our study this past week began with a look at what many people call "Palm Sunday." This is actually a future celebration which will bring in the Millennial reign of Christ, the 1,000 year period when the Lord Jesus Christ will literally reign here on earth! As we saw last week, the sign for the Church-age is the Cross; it is the Cross we are to celebrate, not the crown. To celebrate the crown (Palm Sunday) now is to overlook the Cross; therefore, celebrating this event today is actually *blasphemous*, as it puts *the crown before the Cross*. The religious crowd is simply ignorant of the fact that the Cross must come *before* the crown. Palm Sunday is about a crowd who gathered together for political power, not for the purpose of worshipping their Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. The majority of Christians today do not understand this because they do not understand dispensations. Therefore, in their blind excitement they have fallen into the trap of Joh 4:22, "*You worship that which you do not know.*"

The branch of the palm tree is the sign of Messiahship in Jer 23:5-6; Zec 3:8, 6:12-13; Isa 11:1, and it is to be used as a form of worship in beginning of the Millennial reign.

*Jer 23:5-6 "Behold, the days are coming," declares the LORD, "When I shall raise up for David a righteous Branch; and He will reign as king and act wisely and do justice and righteousness in the land [the Millennial Reign of the Lord Jesus Christ]. In His days Judah will be saved, and Israel will dwell securely; and this is His name by which He will be called, "The LORD our righteousness."*

It is when the Lord Jesus Christ comes back to earth in His Second Advent that He will establish His earthly kingdom. Christians waving palms are actually claiming the crown in celebration of our Lord's earthly kingdom, which will not be instituted in this dispensation. In the Church-age we celebrate the Cross.

## Passover Special

The Passover is filled with tremendous analogies pointing to the Lord Jesus Christ. Passover began on the first month of the Jewish calendar, April 14, 1441 B.C. according to Exo 12:1-14 and Lev 23:5, "*In the first month, on the fourteenth day of the month at twilight is the Lord's Passover.*" God told the Jews that April should be the first month because spring represents the beginning of life. Without a doubt, Passover is the oldest celebration that we still know today. This feast portrayed the work of Christ on the Cross with emphasis on *redemption* (we were born into the slave market of sin, and our Lord paid the ransom for our salvation).

In preparation for the Passover, the house must be cleaned and sterilized in honor of this great occasion. Specifically, the house must be free of all leaven (yeast) which, in the Bible, is symbolic of sin or evil. This is why the Lord said in Mat 16:6, "*Watch out and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.*" Paul wrote in Gal 5:9, "*A little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough.*"

After the leaven is cleaned out, the next procedure in the preparation of the Passover is to get out the special white linen cloths that go with the meal. White linen is symbolic of perfect righteousness in the Bible, Rev 1:14, 3:5, 19:7-8.

*Rev 19:7-8 "Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him, for the marriage of the Lamb has come and His bride has made herself ready." And it was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.*

In an orthodox Jewish home that follows the precise correct procedure, the table is set with a white tablecloth and white candles, and the father of the house wears a white robe (called a "kittel") and a white crown. He is to symbolize the high priest in the tabernacle who wore a pure white robe. This all points to the Lord Jesus Christ who glowed white after His resurrection.

*Mat 17:2 And He was transfigured before them; and His face shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light.*

The table is set with white dishes, which are not used throughout the rest of the year; these items are used to create an atmosphere of purity. Once the preparations are made and the table is set, the candles are lit and interestingly enough, they are lit by a woman. Women perform very little overt function in Judaism, therefore this is very significant. A woman lights the candles because it was a woman who brought the Lord Jesus Christ into the world, as the Light of the World. God chose a woman, Mary, to bring us Christ our Passover, therefore a woman brings the light to the Passover celebration. After the woman lights the candle she sings a song: *“Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the universe, who has exalted us among all people and bade us to kindle the Passover lights.”*

Each place at the table is set with four cups of wine that the family will drink as part of the Passover ceremony. The cups are filled by one of the servants, representing mastery and freedom. The first cup is called the cup of *sanctification*, and it simply sanctifies the table and all of the preparations. The drinking of this cup symbolizes approval and gives the blessing for the Passover to begin. After the first cup, the father takes three loaves of the unleavened bread and places them in a special white linen envelope which has three compartments (representative of the Trinity). Then, in a special ceremony of his own, the father removes the middle loaf (God the Son, the Lord Jesus Christ) from its compartment, breaks it, and then wraps it in a separate piece of white linen and hides it away.

The youngest member of the family who can read will ask four questions; the questions are very general and give the father the opportunity to tell the story of the Exodus.

1. Question: Why is this night distinguished from all other nights, because on this night we eat only unleavened bread? Answer: On this night we eat only unleavened bread because the unleavened bread symbolizes purity from sin.
2. Question: On all other nights we may eat any kind of herbs, but on this night only bitter herbs. Why? Answer: The bitter herbs remind us of the bitterness of slavery in Egypt.
3. Question: On all other nights we do not dip in the bowl, but tonight we dip twice. Why? Answer: This is the dipping by which the Lord Jesus Christ identifies his betrayer, Judas, when He says, *“The one who dips with me shall betray Me.”* This has several meanings; the parsley is dipped twice in salt water—the first dip represents Israel going into the Red Sea and coming out unharmed, and the second represents the Egyptian army who tried to follow them.
4. Question: On this night we all recline in our chairs at the table. Why? Answer: Reclining in the chairs, in comfort, represents freedom.

The Jews are no longer slaves, therefore they can relax. As the story is told, the ceremonial foods on the center plate are eaten. For example, as the father is telling about the bitterness of slavery, he serves each person horseradish from the center plate, and they eat the bread and horseradish.

Then he pauses as they dip the parsley in the salt water. As he talks about the lamb, he uses the unbroken shank bone of the lamb on the plate as a visual illustration. Next comes the *charose* (or *harosis*), a sweet paste made thick to symbolize the clay, or represent the mortar that Pharaoh forced them to build. It is made of figs, dates, and nuts, and was used to symbolize the passing “sweetness” or pleasures of sin in the world. The Bible does teach that sin can give a temporary pleasure, Heb 11:25.

*Heb 11:24-25 By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter; choosing rather to endure ill-treatment with the people of God, than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin.*

The second Passover cup is spilled into the individual plates in front of each person, a drop at a time. Each drop symbolizes a plague God brought upon Egypt while the implacable Pharaoh hardened his heart. The ten red drops fall into the empty white plate in front of each person and they are clearly



representative of the ten great plagues in Egypt. As this happens, the father chants the name of each plague—blood, frogs, gnats, boils, locusts, darkness, death, etc.

Then comes the most wonderful and touchingly symbolic stage of the entire feast, the third cup, which is the cup of redemption, symbolic of the work of Christ on the Cross. After drinking the cup, they would finish the meal, and afterwards the father of the house would then retrieve the piece of bread which he had hidden (an obvious illustration of our Lord's resurrection) and a new cup of unfermented wine. This is the origin of Communion, as we now know it.

The father now brings forth the buried loaf of unleavened bread, which will serve as the dessert to the meal. The *afikomin* (desert), as it is called, means "the arrival," and represents the Lord Jesus Christ, as the Bread of Life.

*Joh 12:24 "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains by itself alone; but if it dies, it bears much fruit."*

The buried unleavened bread (the middle piece from the white linen envelope) is then eaten with the third cup of wine. This is where we get "Communion," the Lord's Supper. The three loaves represent the Trinity, and the middle loaf represents the second Person of the Trinity, God the Son. It was the Son who was broken for our sins—it was his body that was broken for you.

The bread was wrapped in white linen and buried, as was the body of Jesus. Now it is brought forth from the ground with the cup of redemption. The bread is the last thing eaten because it represents the fact that once someone partakes of the bread of life, they will be sustained forever.

*Joh 6:35 Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me shall not hunger, and He who believes in Me shall never thirst."*

In the actual ceremony, the father breaks off pieces from the loaf ("the size of an olive" according to the Jewish *Haggadah*) and passes the pieces around the table. Each one eats his piece and drinks the third cup with it. Blessings are pronounced over the bread and wine individually, which have great meaning for us.

When Christians celebrate the Lord's Supper, they are actually taking a part out of the Jewish Passover and celebrating it today! When the Jews celebrate Passover, little do they realize that they are actually celebrating a part of the Lord's supper. This is the part of the Passover in which the Lord took the bread and the cup and instituted what we call "Communion."

*Mat 26:26 "And while they were eating [the Passover], Jesus took bread, and having blessed it, He broke it and gave it to His disciples, and He said, "Take, eat; this represents My body."*

The Jewish people know exactly what the blessing of the bread means, but ironically, much of the Christian church does not. The Lord said a prayer which was commanded to be said at this point in the ceremony: "*Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the universe who brings forth bread from the earth.*"

He picked up the bread from the floor, representing the earth, and said, "This is my body," a prophecy using the analogy that bringing forth bread from the earth represented our Lord's resurrection as the Bread of Life.

*Joh 6:35 Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life."*

As we know, Jesus Christ was born in Bethlehem, which means "house of bread." He was buried on the second feast, which was the Feast of Unleavened Bread, which represented his impeccability as the God-Man.

The matzah bread is a great representation of the Lord's body. This particular bread has stripes scorched on it from the baking, and as Isaiah wrote, "*By His stripes we are healed,*" Isa 53:5. The bread is pierced through with holes and as the Old Testament, which is also in the Jewish Bible, says in Zec 12:10, "*They will look on Me whom they have pierced.*" And of course, the matzah bread is pure, containing no leaven (therefore no sin).

The third cup has every bit as much significance as the bread, Joh 6:53, *"Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the son of man and drink his blood, you have no life in yourselves."* The Lord identified the wine as His blood, Mat 26:27-28, *"And when He had taken a cup and given thanks, He gave it to them, saying, 'Drink from it, all of you; for this is My blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for forgiveness of sins.'" After the giving of thanks, the head of the house would say, "Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the universe, Creator of the fruit of the vine."* This is very meaningful to each member of the Church, the future Bride of Christ. The Lord was actually thanking the Father for bringing Him His future bride.

Since the Jews celebrate all of this in detail, why are they so blind to the Lord Jesus Christ? Remember Joh 1:11, *"He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him."*

*Joh 12:40 "He has blinded their eyes, and He hardened their heart; lest they see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart."*

*However, even though they are blinded as a race, they still have the opportunity for individual conversion, as do all members of the human race, through the grace of God.*

*2Co 3:15-16 But to this day whenever Moses is read, a veil lies over their heart; but whenever a man turns to the Lord, the veil is taken away.*

*Tit 2:11 For the grace of God has appeared, bringing salvation to all men.*

# SATAN'S REBELLION AND ANGELIC SALVATION

Psalm 4:6-9

04/27/03

Revelation 12:3 And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great [megas] red [purrhos] dragon [drakon] having seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems [diademata]. "Purrhos" describes the fires of affliction and denotes the cruelty of the devil, whereas "megas" describes the great power of the devil as the god of this world. "On his heads were seven diadems [crowns]"; the word "stephanos" is very often translated "crowns," but here we have "diademata," the crowns of rulers as opposed to crowns of decorations.

The great Old Testament prophet Daniel said in Dan 7:2, "I was looking in my vision by night, and behold, the four winds of heaven were stirring up the great sea [a sea of people]." The "four winds," which control the weather are used to indicate that Jesus Christ controls history, including the rise and fall of empires, and this principle is in view in Rev 17:12-15, "'And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, who have not yet received a kingdom, but they receive authority as kings with the beast for one hour. These have one purpose and they give their power and authority to the beast. These will wage war against the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, because He is Lord of lords and King of kings, and those who are with Him are the called and chosen and faithful. And he said to me, 'The waters which you saw where the harlot sits, are peoples and multitudes and nations and tongues.'"

*Dan 7:3-7 "And four great beasts [evil powers] were coming up from the sea, different from one another. The first was like a lion [the Chaldean Empire, between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers in Iraq] and had the wings of an eagle. I kept looking until its wings were plucked, and it was lifted up from the ground and made to stand on two feet like a man; a human mind also was given to it. And behold, another beast, a second one, resembling a bear [the Persian Empire, from India to Egypt, western Asia, the Arabian desert, and the Persian gulf]. And it was raised up on one side, and three ribs were in its mouth between its teeth; and thus they said to it, 'Arise, devour much meat!' After this I kept looking, and behold, another one, like a leopard [the Macedonian Empire, in Europe], which had on its back four wings of a bird; the beast also had four heads, and dominion was given to it. After this I kept looking in the night visions, and behold, a fourth beast [the Roman Empire], dreadful and terrifying and extremely strong; and it had large iron teeth. It devoured and crushed, and trampled down the remainder with its feet; and it was different from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns.*

This fourth beast is Rome, a world power between 264 and 146 B.C. In 146 B.C. the Romans took over Corinth and destroyed the greatest art treasures of the ancient world. They were very vicious, and they conquered anyone who got in their way. However, their cruelty was harnessed in great self-discipline, so that it simply aroused fear in their enemies, which made their conquests easy.

*Dan 7:8 "While I was contemplating the horns, behold, another horn, a little one, came up among them, and three of the first horns were pulled out by the roots before it; and behold, this horn possessed eyes like the eyes of a man, and a mouth uttering great boasts."*

In the Tribulation there will be a revived Roman Empire, and the ten horns represent ten nations. Ten nations out of the Old Roman Empire will come together to form a new Roman Empire. England, France, Germany, the Netherlands, Belgium, Italy, Spain, Portugal, Libya, Egypt, all of North Africa, Syria, Turkey, Armenia, Austria, Yugoslavia, the Balkans, and Greece were all a part of the Roman Empire. We do know that the USA is not a part of this empire. The revived Roman Empire of the tribulation is generally called the king of the West, which could mean western European nations. We do not know exactly which nations the ten horns are. We do know that there will be a majority of

nations opposing one nation, Israel. Psa 46:6-9 says, "The nations made an uproar, the kingdoms tottered; He raised His voice, the earth melted. The Lord of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our stronghold. Selah. ["Lord of hosts" is one of the titles of our Lord Jesus Christ, representing freedom through military victory.] Come, behold the works of the Lord [the wonderful way God has preserved believers in military service, especially in combat], who has wrought desolations in the earth [Jesus Christ controls history and works on behalf of client nations who are facing a military crisis]. He makes wars to cease to the end of the earth; He breaks the bow and cuts the spear in two; He burns the chariots with fire." The client nation is a divinely protected national entity in which spiritually mature believers form a pivot sufficient to fulfill the divine mandates of evangelism, custodianship and communication of Bible doctrine, providing a haven for the Jews, and sending missionaries abroad.

In spite of all the chaos, havoc, confusion, destruction, and evil in the world, Jesus Christ controls history. Evil nations have always existed and always will exist throughout human history. These nations hate peace; they use terror and military force, expressions of their power lust, to conquer other nations. They are described for us briefly in Psa 55:20-21, "He has put forth his hands against those who were at peace with him; he has violated his covenant. His speech was smoother than butter, but his heart was war; his words were softer than oil, yet they were drawn swords." Evil nations attack those who are at peace with them and threaten them with terrorism. They habitually violate their treaties with other nations. The Muslim bible, the Koran, states: "Fight and slay the pagans (infidels) wherever ye find them, and seize them, beleaguer them, and lie in wait for them in every stratagem of war (Surah 9:5)." The Koran also condones violence, racism, and deception in verses such as Surah 9:73, Surah 5:51-74, and Surah 9:3,13.

Psa 140:1-2 is a prayer for protection from evil nations: "Rescue me, O Lord, from evil men; preserve me from violent men, who devise evil things in their hearts; they continually stir up wars." The Bible reveals three principles of protection against such nations: (1) Jesus Christ controlling history, (2) the pivot of mature believers, and (3) a strong military establishment professionally prepared to defend national freedom. Our response to the threats of an evil nation is found in Psa 55:22, "Cast your burden upon the Lord, and He will sustain you; He will never allow the righteous to be shaken"; and 1Pe 5:7, "Casting all your anxiety upon Him, because He cares for you."

These promises and commands to use the faith-rest drill are directed toward the client nation to God and individual believers involved in military action. In the faith-rest drill the spiritual believer combines the promises of God with faith to generate tranquility of soul in the midst of adversity. The divine response to the use of the faith-rest drill is given in Psa 55:23, "But Thou, O God, wilt bring them down to the pit of destruction; men of bloodshed and deceit will not live out half their days. But I will trust in Thee." Jesus Christ controls history through the use of client nations in the destruction of evil nations in warfare.

The dilemma of a peaceful nation is described in two verses in Psa 120:6-7, "Too long has my soul had its dwelling with those who hate peace. I am for peace, but when I speak, they are for war." "Those who hate peace" is a definitive description of the perpetrators of many disasters in the last century. The USA was in a state of isolationism, desiring peace, between World War I and World War II. That changed when we were attacked on December 7, 1941 at Pearl Harbor. We were for peace, but others wanted war. We were drawn into World War II, and we were victorious. Since that time we have fought in a number of military actions with superior troops and weaponry, yet in some cases we lost these conflicts because politicians intervened with policies which made it impossible to win. The no-win war policy is a great tragedy in a nation that loves peace. We must win wars in order to preserve peace—as this is the only modus operandi that is understood in the devil's world. The Lord Jesus Christ warned us of "wars and rumors of wars" until His Second Advent in Mat 24:6.

Our main passage continues in Rev 12:3-4, "And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems. And his tail [Satan's power] swept away a third of the stars of heaven [the prehistoric revolution in heaven, in which one third of the angels followed Satan in the prehistoric angelic conflict], and He [God] threw them to the earth [in the middle of the Tribulation]. And the dragon stood or before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth [Satan desperately wanted to prevent the virgin birth of Christ], so that when she gave birth he might devour or destroy her child [the humanity of Jesus Christ]."

A question many people ask concerning this passage is, "Did all the angels have a fall and rebel against God, or just one third of them?" "Did one third of the angles fall or did they all fall and two thirds come back to Christ?" We can see the results of the prehistoric angelic past in the restoration of planet earth, the creation of mankind, and the continuing angelic conflict. When we see the results we know that there was a cause. We know that at the creation of mankind Satan had already fallen, Isa 14, Eze 28. There are two categories of angelic creation: elect angels and fallen angels. Paul writes to Timothy in 1Ti 5:21, "I solemnly charge you in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus and of His chosen angels, to maintain these principles without bias, doing nothing in a spirit of partiality." What were these angels chosen to? Even though the information we have on the prehistoric past is vague, there are certain passages that give us insight into what may have transpired in eternity past. The elect angels are called "holy angels," Rev 14:10, Luk 9:26, because God made them holy by providing a non-meritorious way to receive His righteousness.

*Rev 15:4 "Who will not fear, O Lord, and glorify Thy name? For Thou alone art holy; for all the nations will come and worship before Thee, for Thy righteous acts have been revealed."*

*Rev 16:5 And I heard the angel of the waters saying, "Righteous art Thou, who art and who wast, O Holy One, because Thou didst judge these things."*

If Jesus Christ is called the only Holy One, which can only refer to the fact that He is the only one who remains experientially holy, and the elect angels are called holy, how can this be, unless they were made holy after they were found unholy? In Rev 7:10-12, resurrected believers praise the Lord for salvation, and the angels join in by twice saying "Amen," in which they concur, agree, and express that they believe it. Believe what? Salvation. They say "Amen" to salvation because they personally understand it, Rev 7:10-12, "And they cry out with a loud voice, saying, 'Salvation to our God who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb.' And all the angels were standing around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures; and they fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, saying, 'Amen, blessing and glory and wisdom and thanksgiving and honor and power and might, be to our God forever and ever. Amen.'"

In the Tribulation, while angels bring divine judgment upon the earth, no angel is allowed to execute this judgment apart from Jesus Christ because He alone is worthy, Rev 5:2-5, "And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, 'Who is worthy to open the book and to break its seals?' And no one in heaven, or on the earth, or under the earth, was able to open the book, or to look into it. And I began to weep greatly, because no one was found worthy to open the book, or to look into it; and one of the elders said to me, 'Stop weeping; behold, the Lion that is from the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has overcome so as to open the book and its seven seals.'"

In Job 4:17-18 we find the statement that God charges error against His angels, and this is used to argue that no man can be just before God: "Can mankind be just before God? Can a man be pure before his Maker? He puts no trust even in His servants; and against His angels He charges error." It is also interesting that at the fall, Satan offered man a counterfeit salvation prior to God offering man a true salvation. True salvation looked ahead to Jesus Christ in Gen 3:21, "And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them." Satan's counterfeit was fig leaves, seen

earlier in Gen 3:7, “Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.” A counterfeit requires prior understanding of the real; therefore, Satan had to have some prior knowledge of salvation in order to offer a counterfeit plan for covering sinfulness and disobedience.

The key word in these passages is the word “holy,” translated from “hosios,” which is used eight times in the Scriptures for the Lord Jesus Christ, and along with the word “monos,” translated “only,” presents the absolute uniqueness of the Lord Jesus Christ. Hosios is used for His person in Act 2:27,13:35, for the guarantor of blessings for the believer in Act 13:34, and for His qualification as High Priest in Heb 7:26. Jesus Christ is seen as the Unique Holy One, the only One to remain perfect. Hosios is the prerequisite for prayer, 1Ti 2:8, should become the believer’s testimony, 1Th 2:10, is the believer’s goal, Luk 1:75, and is a characteristic of the “new man,” Eph 4:24. No one is perfect except Jesus Christ, Psa 89:5-8.

In Col 1:19-20 Jesus Christ is said to reconcile all things to Himself: “For it was the Father’s good pleasure for all the fullness to dwell in Him, and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven.” Reconciliation is the making of peace between those who are enemies. In these verses the Lord is said to do this both on earth and in heaven. The condemnation against Satan in Isa 14 and Eze 28 is specifically against him alone. However, after his sin and fall, God allowed him to tempt all other angels to follow him. God did not interfere with this evil scheme because in His omniscience He knew they would buy the lie, yet He had something better for them—salvation. Let us suppose that all the angels fell and at that moment, God stepped in with judgment. He would have judged Satan first since he was the instigator of the angelic rebellion.

Joh 16:11 says, “The ruler of this world has been judged.” Upon being judged and found guilty and condemned, Satan objected and accused God of being unjust, violating His essence, love, fairness, veracity, etc. As Satan stood condemned, all the angels stood condemned, but condemnation only precedes the divine provision of reconciliation. God offered the angels a way for their sin to be forgiven, in which His divine attributes would in no way be compromised. We have one brief reference to angelic salvation in Heb 2:2-4, “For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense, how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who heard, God also bearing witness with them, both by signs and wonders and by various miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will.” For all this verse does not tell us, one thing it does tell us is that there is a parallel being drawn between angelic salvation and human salvation, our “so great” salvation.

# THE PERFECT JUSTICE OF GOD MANIFESTED TO ANGELS AND HUMANS

Colossians 1:19-20

05/11/03

This week we continued with our main passage in Rev 12:3-4, *“And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon [Satan] having seven heads and ten horns, [the revived Roman empire of the Tribulation and ecumenical religion], and on his heads were seven diadems. And his tail [Satan’s power] swept away a third of the stars of heaven.”*

Whenever we have a question about the seeming injustices of life, we must fall back on the justice of God and the fact that He can only be fair. Satan and the fallen angels learned this principle the hard way. In the prehistoric revolution in heaven, Satan convinced one third of the angels that God was unjust.

However, God can never be unjust. There are certain things that God cannot do:

- God cannot lie, Tit 1:2.
- God cannot be unjust or unfair, Deu 32:4.
- God cannot change, Mal 3:6.
- God cannot say to any member of the body, “I do not need you,” 1Co 14:21.
- God cannot be tempted by evil, Jam 1:13.
- God cannot sin, 1Jo 3:9.

God’s justice is revealed in the second resurrection. There are two general resurrections: The first is for believers only, the resurrection to eternal life. The resurrection body is eternal and permanent, superior to that of angelic creatures, Dan 12:2; Joh 5:24-29; 1Co 15, Rev 20:6,13. This is the “first resurrection.”

*Rev 20:4-6 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given to them. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of the testimony of Jesus and because of the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received the mark upon their forehead and upon their hand; and they came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were completed. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is the one who has a part in the first resurrection; over these the second death has no power, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years.*

The second resurrection is for unbelievers only who are cast into the lake of fire forever, Mat 25:41, 1Co 15:24, Rev 20:5-15.

*Rev 20:11-15 And I saw a great white throne and Him who sat upon it, from whose presence earth and heaven fled away, and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged from the things which were written in the books, according to their deeds. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead which were in them; and they were judged, every one of them according to their deeds. And death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. And if anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.*

This is called the “second resurrection,” the last judgment. The direction for the first resurrection is eternal life; the direction for the second is eternal condemnation and judgment. The difference between the two is one’s attitude toward Christ, Joh 3:36, *“He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; He that believeth not the Son shall not see life but the wrath of God abideth on him.”* As

long as anyone is alive, he has the opportunity of entering into the first resurrection simply by believing in Christ. Since all of the sins of the world were imputed to Christ and judged at the cross, God cannot judge them for their sins. Their sins have already gone to trial in the mind of God and have already been dealt with. Therefore, at the second resurrection they will have their deeds or their works judged.

In the angelic conflict, God has established rules that even He Himself must abide by. One of the rules that God has established is that He will not violate the free will of man. A person can be whatever they choose and God will not make them choose for Him or against Him. We have a lot of issues in our lives where we have to *ask* God for answers because of the rules He has established. This is why He says in Mat 7:7-10, *"Ask, and it shall be given to you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it shall be opened. Or what man is there among you, when his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone? Or if he shall ask for a fish, he will not give him a snake, will he? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your Father who is in heaven give what is good to those who ask Him!"* James said it like this in Jam 4:2, *"You lust and do not have; so you commit murder. And you are envious and cannot obtain; so you fight and quarrel. You do not have because you do not ask."*

The angelic conflict is about two kingdoms against each other, with the volition of humans as the issue. Satan has accused God of not being loving, not being just. And yet we have a God who wants to do everything we need in our lives but our free will must line up with His plan, His ways. When it does then Rom 8:28, *"Becomes a reality, and we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose."* People tend to blame God for everything, when in reality, we are products of our own decisions. The law of volitional responsibility means we will reap what we sow, Gal 6:7. Satan wants human beings to blame God for every tragedy. However, God cannot do anything that is contrary to His divine nature. He is just, righteous, omniscient, omnipresent, omnipotent, love, immutable, veracity, sovereign, and eternal. God cannot use any of these divine attributes in violation of the other; His justice will not allow it. God is in control; He knows all things and being perfectly righteous, He can only make the right decision in dealing with us, Psa 119:137, *"Righteous art Thou, O Lord, and upright are Thy judgments"*; Rev 19:2, *"His judgments are true and righteous"*; and Deu 32:4, *"The Rock! His work is perfect, for all His ways are just; a God of faithfulness and without injustice, Righteous and upright is He."*

*Ecc 3:16-17 Furthermore, I have seen under the sun that in the place of justice there is wickedness, and in the place of righteousness there is wickedness. I said to myself, "God will judge both the righteous man and the wicked man," for a time for every matter and for every deed is there. I said to myself concerning the sons of men, "God has surely tested them in order for them to see that they are but beasts."*

There is a God in heaven who is just and righteous and has everything under control. We must remember that this is the devil's world, and there will always be injustice and unfairness that we must face. If we react to injustice with bitterness, resentment, hatred, antagonism, or any form of arrogance or emotion, then the Lord Jesus Christ cannot act on our behalf as the Supreme Court Judge and He must act against us. You will only be disciplined for your sins of reaction. However, if we respond to the injustices of life with the problem-solving devices then the Lord Jesus Christ will handle the situation for us, Psa 55:22, *"Cast your burdens on the Lord, and he will sustain you; He will never allow the righteous to fall apart."* If you leave all personal injustices, all slander, maligning, public lies, and all unfairness in the hands of the Lord, He will always sustain you, Joh 16:33, *"These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. In the world you have tribulation, but take courage; I have overcome the world."*



We must have a soul filled with doctrine to handle unjust treatment in the same manner that we handle fair treatment. We must not allow our conscience to become filled with garbage and bitterness when we observe or encounter the injustices of life. If you have a strong conscience, you will leave it in the Lord's hands and those who treated you unfairly will be put to shame, without you ever trying to defend yourself or answer back, Rom 12:14, *"Bless those who persecute you; bless and curse not."* The Greek word for persecute is *"dioko,"* which means to habitually pursue. While they pursue you, you are to love them impersonally and honor them. "Curse not" means do not wish evil against them. Paul instructs us in Rom 12:17-20, *"Never pay back evil for evil to anyone. Respect what is right in the sight of all men. If possible, so far as it depends on you, be at peace or live in harmony with all men. Never take your own revenge, beloved, but leave room for the wrath of God, for it is written, 'Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,' says the Lord, 'but if your enemy is hungry, feed him, and if he is thirsty, give him a drink; for in so doing you will heap burning coals upon his head.'"* When we function in grace and do not retaliate, the Supreme Court of Heaven handles the situation. No matter what the situation may be, God's decision is always right.

It was this perfect justice of God that Satan challenged when he fell, and he did so on his own initiative, and then he deceived the other angels. In the same way, as the serpent, he deceived the woman in Gen 3:5.

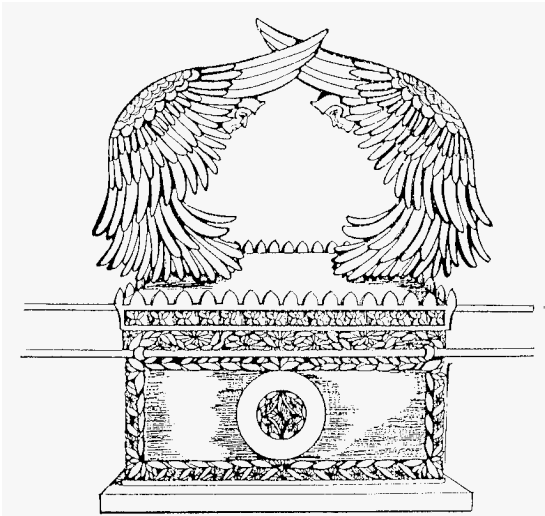
*1Ti 2:14 And it was not Adam who was deceived, but the woman being quite deceived, fell into transgression.*

Adam fell without deception, and he chose to disobey God willingly and knowingly just as Satan did. At the fall then we have one who disobeyed out of his own initiative and one who was deceived. And this pattern reflects what probably happened in the angelic realm. Satan, disobeyed by his own initiative and the other angels were deceived. At the fall, Satan had offered man a counterfeit salvation prior to God offering man a true salvation. True salvation looked ahead to Christ, Gen 3:21, *"And the LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them."* However, Satan's counterfeit was "Operation Fig Leaves" and religion, Gen 3:7, *"Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings."* As we know, a counterfeit presupposes understanding of the real. Satan must have had some prior knowledge of salvation in order to offer a counterfeit a plan for covering sinfulness and disobedience.

The only sin that is unpardonable is the sin of rejecting the Gospel in the allotted time, Mat 12:31-32. Angels would not have been exempt from this condition. Whether all or only one third of the angels fell, would not God have offered some salvation to them? And if offered, are we to suppose that not one of the angels who fell accepted it? If God did not offer a plan for reconciliation to the angels, then God would be unfair if He offered reconciliation to man, who also fell. Satan would have had a very strong objection if God was willing to offer a means of salvation to man and had not offered a means of salvation to the angels.

Lets look at some additional arguments:

1. For example, the Ark of the Covenant illustrates that angles benefit from the work of Christ. Two cherubim are over the mercy seat of the Ark (see cover).



These two replaced Lucifer who abandoned his place as the cherub closest to God and God's work, Eze 28:14, "You were the anointed cherub who covers, and I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire." These two cherubim are partakers of the work of Christ as prefigured by the Ark. They hover over and look into these things.

2. The Veil of Exodus 26:31-35 in the Temple was a reminder of the humanity of Christ. *Exo 26:31-35 "And you shall make a veil of blue and purple and scarlet material and fine twisted linen; it shall be made with cherubim, the work of a skillful workman. And you shall hang it on four pillars of acacia overlaid with gold, their hooks also being of gold, on four sockets of silver. And you shall hang up the veil under the clasps, and shall bring in the ark of the testimony there within the veil; and the veil shall serve for you as a partition between the holy place and the holy of holies. And you shall put the mercy seat on the ark of the testimony in the holy of holies. And you shall set the table outside the veil, and the lampstand opposite the table on the side of the tabernacle toward the south; and you shall put the table on the north side."*

Notice that part of it was made of fine white linen, which symbolizes at experiential righteousness. It was under a blue veil which represents Christ being made lower than heaven, even lower than angels. The purple of the veil represents the royalty of Christ, and the scarlet looks ahead to the work of Christ on the Cross. And the images of cherubim were woven into veil. The curtain speaks of Christ and His work and the angels were on the curtain themselves.

3. The linen curtains of Exodus 26:1-6 were also of the same color scheme and looked ahead to the person and work of Christ in salvation, and they too were to have embroidered upon them the figures of angels.

*Exo 26:1-6 "Moreover you shall make the tabernacle with ten curtains of fine twisted linen and blue and purple and scarlet material; you shall make them with cherubim, the work of a skillful workman. The length of each curtain shall be twenty-eight cubits, and the width of each curtain four cubits; all the curtains shall have the same measurements. Five curtains shall be joined to one another; and the other five curtains shall be joined to one another. And you shall make loops of blue on the edge of the outermost curtain in the first set, and likewise you shall make them on the edge of the curtain that is outermost in the second set. You shall make fifty loops in the one curtain, and you shall make fifty loops on*

*the edge of the curtain that is in the second set; the loops shall be opposite each other. And you shall make fifty clasps of gold, and join the curtains to one another with the clasps, that the tabernacle may be a unit."*

The angels partake of Christ's place of origin, heaven, and of His royalty, in the presence of God, and of His work in salvation, the scarlet color of the curtains.

4. Angels are also often pictured as wearing white garments.

In Mark 16:5 the two angles at the tomb are said to be in white garments (*stolen leuken* in the Greek): *"And entering the tomb, they saw a young man sitting at the right, wearing a white robe; and they were amazed."* The verb is a perfect passive participle form of *periballo*, indicating they were clothed in these garments by God at a point in past and continue to wear them in the present.

Luke uses the word *esthes* for these garments as he also does in Act 1:10 with the angels at Christ's final ascension into heaven: *"And as they were gazing intently into the sky while He was departing, behold, two men in white clothing stood beside them."* At the transfiguration the humanity of Christ was seen in His glorified state and He was in a white, brilliant, dazzling garment that looked ahead to His glorification following the Cross.

In Revelation 19:8 the church, the bride of Christ, is also clothed in white linen garments: *And it was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.* Angels then are now clothed with white garments, passive voice, clothed by God as we will be so clothed in the future and as Christ is clothed right now. This white garment looks at God having made us perfect righteousness in Christ and would be the same for the angles who accepted angelic salvation.

5. Col 1:19-20 is another passage that teaches this principle: *"For it was the Father's good pleasure for all the fullness to dwell in Him, and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven."* Jesus Christ, on the Cross, reconciled all things to Himself, whether things on earth (man) or things in heaven, such as angels. This why Paul taught in Phi 2:9-11, *"Therefore also the God has highly exalted Him to the maximum, and bestowed on Him the name [rank] which is above every name, in order that at the title of Jesus every knee of the heavens should bow, and on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue should acknowledge that Jesus Christ is Lord, resulting in the glory of God the Father.*

6. Now, Heb 2:16 is often suggested as a major objection to angelic salvation: *"For assuredly He does not give help to angels, but He gives help to the descendant of Abraham."* The word *help* is *epilambanomai* and it is a word that is not used for salvation but for the giving of help in a time of distress. The distress here is found in the prior verse, Hebrews 2:15—a fear of death! The Jews had a grave fear of death in the first century. Furthermore, if this verse excludes angels from salvation it would also have to exclude most of the Arab race, most oriental, all black, Indians, even most Europeans because they are not descendants from Abraham.

*Heb 11:6 And without faith it is impossible to please Him...*

When was the offer of salvation to angels ended? There is an allotted time for the opportunity to exercise faith for salvation, Heb 9:27. The offer of salvation for mankind ends at death and in a total finality at the Great White Throne judgment when all unbelievers stand before the Savior. In the same way, there was an allotted time for angelic salvation; but their time to be saved has ended. Both mankind and angles have a limited time to be saved.

Summary:

1. Satan counterfeited salvation to Adam and the Woman prior to God's offer of salvation to them which would indicate a prior knowledge of salvation.

2. Any position regarding what happened in the fall of angels, their salvation, etc is an argument from silent and with that, the only value of one over the other is its consistency with the character of God and the parallel to other known events.
3. God is a God of mercy and the greatest expression of mercy is to offer peace or reconciliation to one's enemies.
4. God is absolutely just and fair and could not have offered salvation to man and not offered it to another creation, angels, who had fallen.
5. Only Christ is forever holy and pure and blameless. For another creature to have these characteristics inherent in them and maintained in them by freewill, would have meant that they could have died for the sins of creation. An angel could have gone to the Cross.
6. Angels are very much a part of the tabernacle, the ark, the veil, the curtains which all look ahead to Christ salvation work.
7. Heb 2:9-10 indicate that Christ would taste death for all creation. *"But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone [pas=all] For it was fitting for Him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to perfect the author of their salvation through sufferings."*
8. The garments of Angels are the same garments given to saved mankind in eternity.
9. In I Timothy 5:21 angles are called chosen or elect which would indicate that there was a time when they were not chosen and not elect.
10. Colossians 1:20 indicates that Christ reconciled all things to Himself, thing on earth and things in heaven.

# A BELIEVER'S ENERGY MUST BE HARNESSSED AND PROJECTED IN THE RIGHT DIRECTION

Romans 14:5-8

05/18/03

A principle we saw this week was the importance of energy being controlled and directed. One thing that characterizes a successful human life is the variety of an individual's ability to produce energy, but energy without *velocity* (speed and direction) is useless in life. Useful energy follows a velocity toward a specific target.

The bullet, for example, has energy, and also the velocity to travel to the target, the antithesis of the grenade. Once you pull the pin on a grenade, it detonates and explodes in all directions. As we have seen, since all believers still possess an old sin nature, they are walking grenades.

The pin of this grenade is the *arrogance complex*. Once a believer pulls the pin, his life is fragmented, as he falls into the cosmic system. However, the believer only pulls the pin of the grenade through his own volition. Remember that being tempted by the sin nature is not sin; only when volition pulls the pin does the believer actually sin. That is why the rebound technique is the first problem-solving device, and it is designed to recover from this "fragmentation." Once believers fragment their life, there will be major problems—distraction, fear, rejection, dying, wrong timing, etc.

The pin of the grenade is always related to some form of arrogance. We have seen in the past the numerous manifestations of arrogance, including jealousy, bitterness, hatred, vindictiveness, implacability, self-pity, self-righteous arrogance, self-centeredness, motivational and functional revenge, slander, maligning, gossip, judging, inordinate ambition, and inordinate competition. Scripture warns against pulling the pin of the grenade.

*Pro 11:2 When arrogance comes, then comes dishonor; but with the humble is wisdom.*

*Pro 16:18 Arrogance precedes destruction, and before a fall there is a lifestyle of arrogance*

*Pro 29:23 A person's arrogance will bring him low, but a lifestyle of humility will attain honor.*

The real issue is not your ability, but your lifestyle of humility. With *humility* there is *teachability*. One phrase of Psa 59:12 describes the fragmented life: "*Let them be caught in their arrogance.*"

*Jam 3:14-16 But if you have bitter jealousy and inordinate ambition in your right lobe, stop being arrogant and stop lying against the truth. This pseudo-wisdom is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly [fragmented], natural [human and psychological viewpoint], demonic [demon influence]. For where jealousy and inordinate ambition exist, there is dishonor and every evil deed.*

*Bitter jealousy* and *inordinate ambition* mean pulling the pin of the grenade. *Pseudo-wisdom* is fragmented living resulting in intellectual arrogance or false doctrine. No one can function in the Christian way of life while fragmented through his own arrogance.

Bitterness is one of the ways to pull the pin of the grenade, and it involves hurting others as well. Bitterness is a pin in the grenade that is often pulled where grace orientation is lacking, Heb 12:15, "*See to it that no one falls short of the grace of God, that no root of bitterness springs up and causes you trouble, and by it [the fragmented life] many are defiled.*"

One fragmented person causes reaction from others, and they in turn become fragmented. Bitterness goes hand-in-hand with unrealistic expectation, when people are not treating you the way you want to be treated, loving you the way you want to be loved, or respecting you the way you want to be respected. So you may become antagonistic toward them or bitter, hateful, or implacable. Once

you have fragmented your life, only God can give you the power to recover through the use of the rebound technique.

Bitterness is related to other pins in the grenade, as in Eph 4:31, *“Let all bitterness, both anger [emotional sin] and wrath [mental attitude sin], both quarreling and slander, must be removed from you, along with all malice.”*

The word malice has two meanings.

1. Malice is the desire and the motivation of the fragmented believer to inflict suffering and injury on others.
2. Malice is motivated by jealousy, hatred, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, self-pity, and revenge motivation followed by the revenge *modus operandi* (the act of revenge).

A grenade explodes and fragments in many different directions. On the other hand, when a bullet is fired from a gun, it travels through the barrel on a straight velocity, and its energy carries it toward its target. This principle of straight velocity and controlled energy is a great analogy to one thing in life that is extremely important (and we live in a time when it has been widely rejected), the principle of authority. A believer’s energy must be *harnessed* and projected in the right direction, and we have begun studying the concept of the harness. The problem is that many believers become subjective and hypersensitive. They can become unstable and cruel when they do not have a harness.

Insecurity is a superficial term for the arrogance of subjectivity and preoccupation with self. When someone feels threatened by the apparent superiority in others, or the thinking of the others, they become very subjective, which means that they are out of harness; they have now become the grenade, and they have no “barrel,” no restraint, to keep them and their energy going in the right direction. Many times these types of individuals can be high-spirited and intellectually and emotionally undisciplined (the absence of the harness). Undisciplined individuals are in constant search of relief from boredom, and try to find that relief in cruelty toward others.

As we have noted in Rev 12:4, Satan in his arrogance became unharnessed, and like a grenade he exploded in many directions. Many believers cannot handle the pressures of life, and as a result they often feel threatened by others. There is nothing wrong with feeling pressure, as long as we respond with the Word of God; even our Lord felt pressure when it came to fulfilling His personal sense of destiny, Luk 12:49-50.

*Luk 12:49-50 “I have come to cast fire upon the earth; and how I wish it were already kindled! But I have a baptism to undergo, and how distressed I am until it is accomplished!”*

The Greek word for “*distressed*” here is “*sunechomai*” and means to be pressured or under stress. Pressure can exist in many circumstances of life, such as business, social life, spiritual life, domestic life, professional life, personal relationships, love life, and so on. A person can be totally acceptable, efficient, professional, sociable, and pleasant, but when unharnessed, the results are opposite; they become unacceptable, inefficient, unprofessional, antisocial, vacillating, pouting, hypersensitive egomaniacs. A harness restricts and restrains, and protects the individual from exploding in all these different directions.

The harness, which includes *enforced* and *genuine* humility, is first composed of “category one” doctrine, the laws of divine establishment. That is where we first encounter the harness and can accept it or to reject it. The harness includes many things, such as authority, friendship, and even romantic love. Bible doctrine is a harness because it restricts all of us in a manner that is beneficial to the spiritual life.

When in the harness, you are kind and thoughtful of others, expressing virtue and integrity from the dynamics of personal humility and sensitivity. In that harness, your energy has velocity and that velocity has a meaningful target. The harness can also be a friend, even a husband or a wife, a reliable person with whom you can talk and discuss things.

Remember that to see ourselves as others see us is generally impossible. Every person has, in his self-consciousness, one concept of himself; however, others often have a very different concept. And for every person there is some area of life where it is very easy to become subjective. There is a certain area in which they become hypersensitive, or become preoccupied with self, because that part of their life is not harnessed. This is why, not only idle hands, but also the wandering mind, is the devil's workshop.

*Pro 19:15-16 Laziness casts into a deep sleep, and an idle man will suffer hunger. He who keeps the commandment keeps his soul, but he who is careless of his ways will die.*

The key is that the harness of self-discipline, integrity, restraint, humility, honor, and virtue, which produces both stability and consistency in one's life, must be effective every day. The Christian life is described in terms of one day at a time, Rom 14:5-8, "One man regards one day above another, another regards every day alike. Let each man be fully convinced in his own mind. He who observes the day, observes it for the Lord, and he who eats, does so for the Lord, for he gives thanks to God; and he who eats not, for the Lord he does not eat, and gives thanks to God. For not one of us lives for himself, and not one dies for himself; for if we live, we live for the Lord, or if we die, we die for the Lord; therefore whether we live or die, we are the Lord's."

Everyone needs a harness to be effective, as worker, a friend, a lover, or a Christian seeking to glorify God, or in any capacity of life. Remember that we are all products of our own decisions, and we cannot have control of our life without our personal harness. Without the harness of self-discipline and humility, without the harness of Bible doctrine, you cannot have a personal sense of destiny. You can only make right decisions inside the harness of Bible doctrine, inside the harness of discipline and authority. As we have seen over and over again, authority is our friend.

We are now ready to conclude Rev 12:4, where we have seen the greatest unharnessed creature of all time, Satan: "*And his tail [Satan's power] swept away a third of the angels of heaven, and He [God] threw them to the earth [this will happen in the middle of the Tribulation]. And the dragon [Satan] stood before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour [destroy] her child.*" The tail of the dragon represents the throwing off of the harness. A dragon's tail is not controlled; like an alligator's tail, it is totally out of control, as in the grenade principle. The dragon's tail is out of control, and the result is the worst kind of barbarianism, the masses of people without any harness of self-discipline, without any harness of honor, integrity, and humility—without anything by which they can use the principle of category one doctrine, "Live and let live."

Satan was the first creature to ever throw off the harness, and in doing so, to reject every restriction which had previously existed on himself. Because of his great authority as the anointed cherub there were very few restrictions, but arrogance removed even those. In arrogance, Satan said, "I will be like the most high God." "I will be God."

When anyone throws off the harness, they can inevitably get others to go with them. The church member who starts to gossip and malign, throws off the harness, and he always takes people with him. There are always people out of the harness just waiting in line to follow a leader who throws off the harness. This was true among angelic creatures, and this what we still see, down to this day—millions and millions of demons, the two categories that we have studied, the disembodied spirits and those that have bodies. The origin of these creatures was their decisions made from a position of weakness, and from those decisions came the total loss of control over their own lives, followed by loss of a personal sense of destiny, which made them followers of Satan. These followers are mentioned in our main passage with the Greek verb "*suro*," translated "swept away," which means to drag or to pull.

*Rev 12:4 And his tail swept away a third of the angels of heaven, and He threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour her child.*

When a leader throws off the harness, there are always those who are ready to be pulled down with him. They are now lawless, with no restraint or restriction. The basic characteristic of being unharnessed is arrogance, and they reject all authority and feel threatened by anyone who seems to be better off in any way. Therefore, they try to compete with others and often do so by maligning, judging, and gossiping, and in many cases even violence.



# RELIGION: SATAN'S ACE TRUMP

John 4:22  
05/25/03

The main passage in our current study is Rev 12:4, *“And his tail [Satan’s power] swept away a third of the angels of heaven.”* Satan rejected the divine harness and became a grenade, exploding in numerous directions. We are all products of our own decisions, and you cannot have control of your life without a harness, such as self-discipline and humility; without Bible doctrine, you cannot have a personal sense of destiny. You can only make right decisions inside the harness of Bible doctrine, inside the harness of discipline and authority. Satan and the fallen angels had no harness upon them, and they were coming to planet earth as walking grenades. Therefore, Rev 12:12 says, *“For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time.”*

Satan was the first creature to ever throw off the harness, and in doing so, to reject every restriction that he had previously been under. He took one third of God’s congregation with him, and as we have seen, when anyone throws off the harness, they can always get others to join them. This is what happens in Rev 12:4, *“And his tail swept away a third of the stars [angels] of heaven.”* The Greek verb *“suro”* is translated *“swept away”* and it means to drag or to pull. This the pattern set by Satan in the prehistoric angelic conflict, which has continued through human history to this day, and will continue throughout the rest of the Church-age and the Tribulation. In Isa 14:12, God says to Satan, *“How you have fallen from heaven, O star of the morning, son of the dawn! You have been cut down to the earth, you who have weakened the nations!”* Satan was the star of the morning before his fall, but he threw off the harness. His organization still has one major problem—it was formed by throwing off the harness, therefore it can never win.

In the Bible, Satan has three falls. The first fall of Satan took place in eternity past, perhaps billions of years before man’s creation, Eze 28:15, *“You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created, until unrighteousness was found in you.”* In the middle of the Tribulation, Satan has his second fall, and he is cast out of heaven, Rev 12:9, *“And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.”* Satan still has access to heaven now. At the end of the Millennial reign of Jesus Christ, we have the third fall of Satan, Rev 20:1, *“And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.”*

No one, angel or human, can throw off the harness of life and survive, because doing so is self-destructive. The harness for the Royal Family of God in this dispensation is the predesigned plan of God, and the believer without the harness resides and functions in the cosmic system. The harness protects the believer from the cosmic system and its demonic influence. When the Royal Family of God is in the harness of the predesigned plan of God, they advance to maturity, forming the pivot, which preserves, blesses, and prospers the client nation.

In Rev 12:4, Satan and his fallen angels are thrown out of heaven. The result of this is the greatest wave of anti-Semitism in all of human history. In desperation, Satan will try to destroy those who have always been a thorn in his side—believers and all Jews, whether they are believers or unbelievers. All anti-Semitism originates with Satan, and this is his last desperate chance. Once Satan is confined to the earth he expresses his frustration and wrath with his genius to form a very aggressive plan. His plan is very simple—to use everything at his means, including the third demon assault army, his fallen angels that had been stationed in heaven until this time. He will also use the ecumenical religion, which will be formed under the dictator of the revived Roman Empire. He deceives the whole world.

A known military expression passed down for many generations in the United States military is “know your enemy.” One of the greatest problems today is that we do not know our enemy, whether it is in the kingdom of darkness or the natural world. Most Christians think that they know their enemy, but do not know him at all. As 1Jo 5:19 says, “*The whole world lies in the power of the evil one.*” He will use the media and all forms of communication to try to eliminate Israel; the main reason being that God has not yet fulfilled all His promises to Israel. He is waiting until the right time to do so.

God’s timing is absolutely perfect, and at the Second Advent, the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenants to Israel will all be fulfilled. As part of the Abrahamic Covenant, which is being continually fulfilled, God punishes and destroys anyone who becomes anti-Semitic. The Palestinian Covenant gives the Jews an unconditional promise of a land which they have never possessed. In order for God to keep this covenant, the Jews must still be alive at the Second Advent. David will have a Son who will reign forever, the Lord Jesus Christ. The New Covenant to Israel guarantees that the Jewish nation, which is restored at the time of the Second Advent, will be a client nation throughout the Millennial Reign of Christ, and for all eternity.

The faithfulness of God versus the genius of Satan is the great issue in the last 3½ years of the tribulation, the time of the devil’s desperation, when Satan does his utmost to destroy the Jews completely. His great weapon will be religion. Satan has always used religion to intensify all forms of evil. Religion is the motivation for the greatest systems of evil the world has ever known. Rev 12:4 continues, “*And the dragon stood before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour her child [destroy the humanity of Christ].*” What Satan tried desperately to stop was the virgin birth of Christ. This also refers to the nation of Israel being reborn. There has never been, and never will be, any system of evil as great as religion. Religion has produced some of the greatest of all criminal organizations. Powerful religions such as Roman Catholicism have suppressed freedom in every way. The *Renaissance* was a rebirth and revival of classical art, architecture, literature, and learning that originated in Italy in the 14<sup>th</sup> century and later spread throughout Europe. This period lasted roughly from the 14<sup>th</sup> through the 16<sup>th</sup> century, marking the transition from medieval to modern times. The Renaissance was the veneer of Greek culture that opposed the oppression of the Roman Catholic Church; however, with all the false doctrine the Roman Catholic Church practiced at the time, the Renaissance was unsuccessful in stopping it, because the Renaissance was a *cultural* attack. No cultural attack against false doctrine ever succeeds because it is not strong enough, just as the culture of the U.S.A. will never succeed in reforming the nations of Islam. So the renaissance failed as a harness to control the problem of religion at the time, but the *Reformation* would become the harness.

The Reformation was a 16<sup>th</sup>-century movement in Western Europe aimed at reforming certain doctrines and practices of the Roman Catholic Church, and it resulted in the establishment of the Protestant churches. The Reformation was the harness that saved both the Renaissance and western European civilization, because it was a *doctrinal* attack against the false doctrines of the Roman Catholic Church. Up to the 3<sup>rd</sup> century A.D., the Roman Catholic Church was generally very orthodox in its doctrine. However, it then became very unorthodox. The major deception that started the Roman Catholic Church in the wrong direction was their policy of trying to make the church the state. They taught the unity of church and state and sought to combine them. Therefore, the church became the state and this was the development of the “Holy Roman Empire” (which was “neither holy, nor Roman, nor an empire,” nevertheless this is what it was called). Once the Roman Catholic Church departed from Bible doctrine as the absolute authority, it became very tyrannical, which resulted in the horrible condition of Europe in medieval times. What our Lord said to the woman at the well in Joh 4:22-23, He could also say to the Catholic Church: “*You worship that which you do not know; we worship that which we know, for salvation is from the Jews. But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth; for such people the Father seeks to be His*

worshippers.” The Roman Catholic Church was anti-Semitic. In the last century, they refused to stand up for the Jews during the Holocaust. Their leaders said the Jews had rejected the Lord, so they were getting what they deserved.

During medieval times there were many organizations of believers who were completely orthodox, because the Lord has His testimony in every generation. However, the Roman Catholic Church was immersed in religion, and it submerged Bible doctrine except in rare cases. The following false doctrines were then developed and taught:

1. Prayers for the dead, about A.D. 300.
2. The sign of the cross, A.D. 300.
3. Wax candles, about A.D. 320.
4. Worship of angels and dead saints, and use of images, A.D. 375.
5. The Mass as a daily celebration, A.D. 394.
6. The exaltation of Mary as the “Mother of God,” A.D. 431.
7. Priests dressing differently than laymen, A.D. 500.
8. Extreme Unction, oil, incense, ointment, and balm, A.D. 526.
9. The doctrine of purgatory, A.D. 593.
10. Latin language used in prayer and worship, A.D. 600.
11. Prayers directed to Mary, dead saints, and angels, A.D. 600.
12. The title of pope, A.D. 607.
13. Kissing of the pope’s foot, A.D. 709.
14. Temporal power of the popes, A.D. 750.
15. Worship of the cross, images, and relics, A.D. 786.
16. Holy water, A.D. 850.
17. Worship of Saint Joseph, A.D. 890.
18. College of cardinals established, A.D. 927.
19. Baptism of bells, A.D. 965.
20. Canonization of dead saints, A.D. 995.
21. Fasting on Fridays and during Lent, A.D. 998.
22. Celibacy of the priesthood, A.D. 1079.
23. The rosary (mechanical praying with beads), A.D. 1090.
24. The Inquisition, A.D. 1184.
25. Sale of indulgences, A.D. 1190.
26. The doctrine of transubstantiation, A.D. 1215.
27. Confession of sins to a priest instead of God, A.D. 1215.
28. Adoration of the wafer (host), A.D. 1220.
29. The Bible forbidden to laymen, A.D. 1229.
30. The scapular, A.D. 1251.
31. The cup forbidden to the people in Communion, A.D. 1414.
32. Tradition declared of equal authority with the Bible, A.D. 1545.
33. Apocryphal books added to the Bible, A.D. 1546.

In this subtle, progressive attack on the doctrines of the Bible, we can see religion as the devil’s ace trump.

The Renaissance was a cultural counterattack against the deception of the Roman Catholic Church, and it failed, because religion always has more power than culture. Satan will use warfare but, most of all, religion to attack the people of God and the entire Jewish race. There are some important aspects of religion that we must be aware of:

1. Christianity and religion are *antithetical*. In Christianity, God saves mankind through personal faith in Jesus Christ. In religion, man seeks to impress God with his works.
2. Religion can be classified as the devil's ace trump. Religion has been invented by Satan to *counterfeit* God's plan, purpose, and will for your life, and to divert you from the execution of the predesigned plan of God for the Church-age.
3. Religion is a key part of the devil's strategy to become "like the Most High God," as stated in Isa 14:14.
4. Christianity is not a religion but an eternal relationship with God through personal faith in Christ. In religion, mankind seeks the approbation of God through good deeds, human merit, and various categories of works. In Christianity, God seeks for man.
5. Religion reflects the evil genius of Satan. Christianity represents the perfect integrity of God combined with His grace policy.
6. For deceit and error to be carried out effectively, Satan has devised a system of counterfeits of Christianity—the counterfeits of religion. Satan has counterfeit systems for the following:
  - a. Righteousness, Mat 19:16-28.
  - b. Way of life, Mat 23:13-36.
  - c. Communion table, 1Co 10:19-21.
  - d. Gospel, 2Co 4:3-4, Gal 1:1-9.
  - e. Ministers, 2Co 11:13-15.
  - f. Spirituality, Gal 3:1-3.
  - g. Gods, 2Th 2:3-4.
  - h. Power (dynamics), 2Th 2:8-10.
  - i. Doctrine, 1Ti 4:1.

### Memorial Day Tribute

I knew a man, called him Sandy Cane.  
 Few folks even knew his name.  
 But a hero, yes was he.  
 Left a boy, came back a man.  
 Still many just don't understand  
 About the reasons we are free.  
 I can't forget the look in his eyes  
 Or the tears he cried,  
 As he said these words to me.

All gave some and some gave all.  
 Some stood through for the red, white and blue,  
 And some had to fall.  
 And if you ever think of me,  
 Think of all your liberties, and recall,  
 Some gave all.

Now, Sandy Cane is no longer here.  
 But his words are oh so clear  
 As they echo throughout our land.  
 And all his friends who gave us all,

Who stood the ground and took the fall  
To help their fellow man.  
Love your country and live with pride  
And don't forget those who died.  
America, can't you see?

All gave some and some gave all.  
Some stood through for the red, white and blue,  
And some had to fall.  
And if you ever think of me,  
Think of all your liberties, and recall,  
Some gave all.

And if you ever think of me  
Think of all your liberties, and recall, yes recall,  
Some gave all.  
Some gave all.

# PASSIVE AND ACTIVE ARROGANCE

The Reason for Anti-Semitism and the Holocausts Revelation

Revelation 17:16-17

06/01/03

*Revelation 12:4 And his tail swept away a third of the angels of heaven, and [God] threw them to the earth. And the dragon [Satan] stood before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he [Satan] might devour [destroy] her child [the humanity of Christ].*

This "birth" refers to the virgin birth of the Lord Jesus Christ, well as the rebirth of Israel, both of which Satan opposed in every way he could. Satan will try anything to destroy the Jews. The Greek verb for "stood" is "histemi," which means to stand against, in the sense of antagonism. The dragon appeared before the woman, and he appeared with a very hostile intent. He stood before her to attack.

This all began back in the book of Deuteronomy in Deu 4:19-27, 28:63-68 where God told Israel that if she continued to rebel against Him, she would suffer persecution more than any other nation in human history.

*Deu 28:68 "And the Lord will bring you back to Egypt in ships, by the way about which I spoke to you, 'You will never see it again!' And there you shall offer yourselves for sale to your enemies as male and female slaves, but there will be no buyer."*

This is not God directly doing this to the Jews, but simply removing the hedge of protection and allowing Satan and the kingdom of darkness to attack the Jews. Therefore, in Jer 29:17-19, because she rejected the Word of God, Israel was told that she would be a plague to people wherever she went: *"Thus says the Lord of hosts, 'Behold, I am sending upon them the sword, famine, and pestilence, and I will make them like split-open figs that cannot be eaten due to rotteness. And I will pursue them with the sword, with famine and with pestilence; and I will make them a terror to all the kingdoms of the earth, to be a curse, and a horror, and a hissing, and a reproach among all the nations where I have driven them, because they have not listened to My words,' declares the Lord, 'which I sent to them again and again by My servants the prophets; but you did not listen,' declares the Lord."*

History records for us such events as the following:

1. The Crusaders massacred the Israelites under the pretext that the Israelites were "god killers"; from May to July 1096, 12,000 Jews were killed on the Rhine land.
2. On November 1, 1290 all Jews were exiled from England under penalty of hanging. They were not readmitted until 370 years later.
3. From spring to autumn in the year 1298, 100,000 Jews were killed in Franconia, Bavaria, and Austria.
4. In September 1306, 100,000 Jews were exiled from France under the threat of death.
5. In 1348 the Jews were accused of causing the black plague, and a million of them were killed.
6. On August 2, 1492, the Inquisition drove 300,000 Jews out of Spain under the threat of death.
7. From 1648-1658 about 400,000 Polish Jews were killed.
8. From 1941-1945, under the German dictator Adolph Hitler, over 6,000,000 European Jews were butchered in concentration camps.

For centuries the Jews could not even return to their homeland, Isa 5:6, *"And I will lay it waste; it will not be pruned or hoed, but briars and thorns will come up. I will also charge the clouds to rain no rain on it."*

*Deu 11:17 "The anger of the Lord will be kindled against you, and he will shut up the heavens so that there will be no rain, and the ground will not yield its fruit; and you will perish quickly from the good land which the Lord is giving you."*

*Zec 7:14 "But I scattered them with a storm wind among all the nations whom they have not known. thus the land is desolated behind them, so that no one went back and forth, for they made the pleasant land desolate."*

The main reason for the Jewish holocausts is simply their own arrogance in their rejection of their Messiah and His protection. God's desire is to protect His people; however, even though He will ultimately protect them, His justice will not violate their free will. The majority of Israel today is filled with arrogance against the truth (scar tissue of the soul and hardness of the heart). While many individual Jews have believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, as a nation they have entered into passive arrogance. One of the many natural laws that the Lord Jesus Christ has put into operation to control human history is that passive arrogance demands the function of active arrogance against it.

Passive arrogance is generally associated with freedom and prosperity for three or four generations. Freedom and prosperity originate from a large pivot of believers and the principles of establishment. Passive arrogance accepts this freedom and prosperity totally apart from human virtue and a sense of responsibility. These people usually think that life owes them a living, and they are very ungrateful. Passive arrogance assumes one has a right to all those blessings and prosperity without any adherence to the laws of divine establishment. Therefore, because Jesus Christ controls history, no nation or race ever experiences a holocaust without following the historical trends that lead to such an event. Negative volition, apostasy, and passive arrogance or indifference create the vacuum that attracts the persecution of active arrogance, which brings holocaust and historical disaster.

Evil demands evil and cruelty demands cruelty, and therefore passive arrogance demands the function of active arrogance against it. Active arrogance punishes passive arrogance until it too becomes passive through prosperity. Therefore, a nation can be the instrument of punishment through active arrogance today, and tomorrow become the victim of holocaust because of passive arrogance and taking prosperity for granted. The group or nation that attacks and punishes is generally very cruel; it takes cruelty to punish cruelty, and evil to punish evil. This has always been the pattern of history and therefore part of the historical trend, which explains the Jewish holocausts and the rise and fall of nations and empires.

In the book of *Revelation*, Satan in his active arrogance, frustrated by his fall from heaven in the middle of the Tribulation, is the instrument of punishment of the Jews during the second half of the Tribulation.

*Rev 17:16 And the ten horns which you saw, and the beast, these will hate the harlot and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and will burn her up with fire.*

The "ten horns" and the "beast" represent *political* and *historical* degeneracy in the Tribulation period. The harlot (prostitute) represents *religious* degeneracy.

Historical degeneracy persecutes religious degeneracy in every generation. If the nation of Israel during the Church-age reaches the point of religious degeneracy, then a Gentile nation will be used to punish them. This is a part of God's plan to preserve the nation of Israel so that they will not self-destruct. Verse 17 answers the question of who has ordained political degeneracy to persecute religious degeneracy.

*Rev 17:17 For God has put it in their hearts to execute His purpose by having a common purpose, and by giving their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God should be fulfilled.*

A holocaust takes place in the second half of the Tribulation, when the beast (political or historical degeneracy) destroys the prostitute (religious degeneracy). Political degeneracy of the revived Roman empire persecutes and destroys religious degeneracy of the Tribulation (the prostitute), and many Jews will die at this time. Through cosmic involvement these Jews have entered into a state of passive arrogance, which always attracts active arrogance (i.e., persecution). The anti-Semitic group is

characterized by evil and active arrogance, which causes them to attack passive arrogance from a position of evil. This does not justify anti-Semitism, but explains it in terms of historical trends.

The Jews who will be the victims of Satan in the middle of the Tribulation are those apostate Jews who have developed passive arrogance through their residence and function in the cosmic system. They will be outside the wall of fire and the protection of God. There is a wall of fire and divine protection given to the Jews, Zec 2:5, *“For I, declares the Lord, ‘will be a wall of fire around her, and I will be the glory in her midst.’”* However, they can place themselves outside of this wall of fire and protection through their own volitional decisions.

*Jer 2:19 “Your own wickedness will correct you, and your apostasies will reprove you; know therefore and see that it is evil and bitter for you to forsake the Lord your God, and the dread of Me is not in you, declares the Lord God of hosts.”*

However, the Jews are God’s chosen race, and He will always be faithful to them.

*Zec 2:8 For thus says the LORD of hosts, “After glory He has sent me against the nations which plunder you, for he who touches you, touches the apple of His eye.”*

*Mal 3:17 “They [born-again Jews] are His jewels.”*

*Isa 62:3 “They [true Israel] are His crown of glory.”*

Through their own free will, the Jews can make certain decisions to experientially place themselves in demonic danger, especially getting involved with *religion*. Religion produces arrogance and ignorance, as well as cruelty and persecution, which nullifies tolerance and substitutes tyranny. Religion suppresses freedom, and it does not allow others to make mistakes, but persecutes them vigorously, as does the religion of Islam.

*Rev 12:4 And the dragon stood [who had stood] before the woman [Israel and the virgin Mary]...*

The woman in past history was the Virgin Mary, but the woman in the Tribulation is Israel. Again, the verb *“histemi”* (“stood”) means to “stand against” in antagonism. The *perfect tense* of this verb means that this action is still going on. The *active voice* means that Satan produces the action as the author of anti-Semitism. The *indicative mood* of the verb means that it is a reality of the intensified anti-Semitism prior to Second Advent.

*Rev 12:4 And the dragon stood before the woman...*

The Greek noun translated “woman” in this verse is *“gunaikos,”* and it refers to Israel. Satan sought to destroy Israel at the point of the virgin birth, because while the Jews did not understand it as a sign, Satan did. Once again, just before the Second Advent, Satan will go after the woman, Israel.

Here we see Satan as the loser of the angelic conflict, because of the virgin birth, and because Christ went to the Cross, and because He won His strategic victory in bearing our sins in His own body on the Cross. There is no way any creature can defeat the Creator. Satan has challenged the Creator before in the First Advent. He will challenge the Creator in the middle of the Tribulation. These are the two greatest challenges he has ever raised.

Satan understands the Davidic covenant, and he has two chances to hinder its fulfillment, to prevent the Son of David from sitting on His throne in the Millennium. At his first chance, in the First Advent, he failed. One chance has been lost, the chance to stop the virgin birth, and after the virgin birth to hinder Christ from going to the Cross. At his second chance in the Tribulation, he will fail again. Satan thinks he can destroy all Israel so that there will be no Jew alive on the earth to receive the unconditional promises, such as the Davidic covenant, and no Jews to form a restored client nation for the Millennium, and then he will have won his point. Satan is especially sensitive to the Davidic covenant and its significance. Therefore, Satan attempts to frustrate the incarnation; he has always understood the consequences of the Davidic covenant.

With this in mind, when Adam was given a wonderful promise concerning the Messiah, that Christ would come as the seed of the woman, Satan understood this, and therefore he motivated Cain



to murder Able, in *Genesis* chapter 4. Later came the demonic genetic attack on the human race in Gen 6:1-13, which were attacks on Adam's seed. When Satan discovered that it was no longer Adam's seed in general, because Adam's seed was now very extensive and God had narrowed it down to Abraham's seed, he then focused his attack on Abraham's seed. This is why Sarah wound up in the Harem of an Egyptian king, in Gen 12:10-20, but this attack failed. Then Pharaoh issued a command to kill the entire male line of Israel in Exo 1:10-16, but that also failed. The Pharaoh then attempted to annihilate Israel at the Red Sea, Exo 14, but once again Satan's attacks were unsuccessful.

All of these were attacks made on Abraham's seed. Satan was so successful at one time in the Old Testament that it came down to just one seed of David left. There was an attack, of course, in the dilemma of Joseph when he discovered that Mary was pregnant, and later there was Herod's command to exterminate the royal line in Mat 2:13-18. Satan's relentless attacks never cease.

# IN THE MILLENNIAL AGE, DIVINE RIGHTEOUSNESS IS EXPRESSED TO MANKIND AS NEVER BEFORE

Revelation 12:5

06/08/03

*Revelation 12:4 And his tail swept away a third of the angels of heaven, and [God] threw them to the earth. And the dragon [Satan] stood [antagonistically] before the woman [the virgin Mary] who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he [Satan] might devour her child [destroy the humanity of Christ].*

The word “devour” is the Greek word “katesthio,” which means to devour, to eat completely, and to totally destroy, and refers to intense anti-Semitism. However, Satan will never accomplish this objective, even at the point of his greatest power in the middle of the Tribulation.

Rev 12:5 goes on, “And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron, and her child was caught up to God and to His throne.” Here we see the strategic victory of the First Advent in our Lord’s resurrection, ascension, and session. Satan desperately wanted to destroy the humanity of Christ because he knew why the Lord Jesus Christ came. The purpose, the goal, the objectives, and the climax of the life of Jesus Christ was His sacrificial death. He came into the world for the purpose of dying, Mar 10:45, “For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.” The death of Jesus Christ is not the end of the story; it is the theme of the story, beginning to end. He was born to die.

In the Old Testament, we find many things to help us understand the meaning of the death of Christ, which was yet to come.

- In the story of Adam and Eve, we first learn that sacrifice is necessary to cover sin, Gen 3:21, “*And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them.*”
- In the sacrifices of Cain and Abel, we learn that it is not only sacrifice, but a certain sacrifice, the sacrifice of death, Gen 4:4-5, “*And Abel, on his part also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of their fat portions. And the Lord had regard for Abel and for his offering; but for Cain and for his offering He had no regard.*”
- From the story of Abraham we learn that God Himself will provide that sacrifice, as God provided an animal in place of Isaac, Gen 22:7-8, “*And Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, ‘My father!’ And he said, ‘Here I am, my son.’ And he said, ‘Behold, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for the burnt offering?’ And Abraham said, ‘God will provide for Himself the lamb for the burnt offering, my son.’ So the two of them walked on together.*”

All these principles are preparing us for Jesus Christ, the ultimate sacrifice, the perfect sacrifice, the substitute, the gift of God, the unblemished Lamb. Everything in the New Testament then focuses on the Cross. In the gospels, *Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John*, the Cross is the theme. The book of *Acts* is the record of the world’s reaction to the death and resurrection of Christ. The epistles are written to those who believe in the death and resurrection of Christ, to instruct them in the implications of the Cross. In the book of *Revelation*, we meet the Lamb that was slain before the foundation of the world, who will return as the King of kings and Lord of lords. Everything in the Old Testament leads up to the Cross, the gospels focus on the Cross, and the rest of the New Testament deals with the implications and results of the Cross. The death of the Lord Jesus Christ then is the focal point of all of redemptive history, and is not an accident, but rather the climax of the plan of God.

*Rev 12:5 And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron, and her child was caught up to God and to His throne.*

A main principle in this verse is the efficiency of God’s plan, and inordinate competition against God’s plan could not succeed then and never will. There are two kinds of competition in life—

legitimate competition and *inordinate* competition. Inordinate competition is always based on false motivation. It results from having no personal sense of destiny, no control of one's life, and bad decisions from a position of weakness, and it always results in feeling threatened (threatened by people whom you consider to be superior, or an attack upon your own form of arrogance). We are given some great advice in 2Co 10:12, *"For we are not bold to class or compare ourselves with some of those who commend themselves; but when they measure themselves by themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they are without understanding."*

Inordinate competition is formed from the motivation of feeling threatened by other people, resulting in operation "put down." People around you no longer stand on their merits, but on their demerits, which others have assigned to them through gossip, maligning, and other underhanded activities. Pro 25:27 warns us, *"It is not good to eat much honey, nor is it glory to search out one's own glory."* Pro 26:12 says, *"Do you see a man wise in his own eyes? There is more hope for a fool than for him,"* and Pro 27:2 instructs us to *"Let another praise you, and not your own mouth; a stranger, and not your own lips."* In Phi 2:3, the Apostle Paul writes, *"Do nothing motivated by contentiousness or ambitious pride, but with humility of mind [by means of grace orientation] let each of you keep on considering one another as more important than himself."*

The Bible condemns inordinate (unrestrained, unregulated, undisciplined) competition. While competition in the business or athletic realms is legitimate and even commendable, in the social, sexual, or spiritual realms it is a source of sin and evil. Inordinate competition is a sign of arrogance, pride, and jealousy, and, most of all, insecurity. The inordinate competitor is insecure socially, sexually, and/or spiritually. On the other hand, the one who does not compete behind your back is a relaxed individual; he is reliable with capacity for great friendship.

Falling into social, sexual, or spiritual competition destroys capacity for love in all categories. An inordinate competitor always tries to put you down, and finds a place to brag about taking advantage of you. He always tries to impress you with the wrong things and is never relaxed around others. Inordinate competition comes in many forms and performs many adverse functions in life. It has a facade of sweetness, flattery, and pseudo-spirituality, but behind it is an arrogant, jealous, insecure, hypocritical person, waiting to strike like a viper, Psa 140:1-3, *"Rescue me, O Lord, from evil men; preserve me from violent men, who devise evil things in their hearts; they continually stir up wars. They sharpen their tongues as a serpent; poison of a viper is under their lips. Selah."* We see our Lord's attitude in Mat 3:7, *"But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, 'You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?'"*

Beware of the hypocrite who always talks about "doctrine." The inordinate competitor likes to play games like "spiritual king of the mountain," asking questions and telling you the answers, not listening when you're speaking, motivated by pride and jealousy. He is emotional, therefore often self-righteous, legalistic, anti-authority, and sometimes conspiratorial. He seeks to put down the authority around him. The believer must learn to spot him and his games, and separate from him. Only in isolation does the competitor wake up to his need of doctrine.

The reversionistic competitor does not adjust to the justice of God, and he never functions on the grace principle that justice demands justice. He becomes a distraction to the doctrinal perception of himself and others, because he concentrates more on being superior to his contemporaries than he does on humbling himself.

Legitimate competition is never based on being threatened or insecure. It is based on using whatever abilities and motivations you have to succeed. Legitimate competition is related to success and being a winner in a certain field. In the spiritual life, it is realizing one's personal sense of destiny, having control of one's own life, and making good decisions from a position of strength.

Satan uses arrogance, and one of the first, worst forms of arrogance is to feel threatened. We live in a time when many are whiners and complainers, and the reason they lose out is because they

have felt threatened. They have made bad decisions and have lost control of their lives, and therefore have no personal sense of destiny. People with no personal sense of destiny blame everyone else for their own failures in life. People who feel threatened feel that way in a state of arrogance that exists in the cosmic system (specifically cosmic one).

One principle we should all have learned by now is that in the greatest period of historical disaster we can face, God's plan still goes on. This includes God's plan for your blessing and prosperity. His plan never changes or adjusts itself to personal, economic, social, or military disaster. When we change, it is because we have left the plan of God and we have gone into the cosmic system. You can have the same blessing that God intended for you in time of great disaster as you could have in time of historical prosperity. Whether we experience historical prosperity or historical disaster, God's plan for our life goes on, but it takes the power of the predesigned plan of God and the function of the faith-rest drill to give us a personal sense of destiny in time of historical disaster.

In Rev 12:5, *"She gave birth to a son, a male child, who is to rule all the nations..."* The phrase "rule all the nations" refers to the Millennial reign, a period of 1,000 years when the Lord Jesus Christ will rule this earth as King. It is important to understand that this age will see the fulfillment of all the covenants that God made with Israel. Without the Millennium, those covenants would not be fulfilled.

1. Abrahamic Covenant. The promises of the Abrahamic covenant concern the land and sea, Mic 7:18-20, Eze 34:24-31. In this covenant, Israel's continuation and possession of the land and their inheritance of blessings is fulfilled.
2. Davidic Covenant. The promises in the Davidic Covenant concern the king, the throne, and the royal house, Jer 23:5-8,20-26, 34:23-25, 37:23-24. The promise of Israel having a kingdom over which David's Son reigns as king is fulfilled.
3. Palestinian Covenant. The promises of the Palestinian Covenant concern the possession of the land, Isa 11:11-12, 65:9; Eze 36:28-29. This will also be fulfilled in the Millennium.
4. New Covenant. The promises of the New Covenant are for a new heart, the forgiveness of sin, and the filling of the Spirit, and all find their fulfillment to Israel in the Millennium, Jer 31:31-34, 32:35-39; Eze 11:18-20; Rom 11:26-29.

All of this takes place immediately after Satan is bound. He is imprisoned for 1,000 during the Millennial reign, Rev 20:1-3, "And I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold of the dragon, the serpent of old, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years, and threw him into the abyss, and shut it and sealed it over him, so that he should not deceive the nations any longer, until the thousand years were completed; after these things he must be released for a short time."

In Rev 12:5, the Lord Jesus Christ will "rule all the nations with a rod of iron" in the Millennium, an age when divine righteousness is expressed to mankind as never before. This will be God's final test for fallen humanity under the most ideal circumstances and perfect environment. All outward sources of temptation are removed and man is apart from satanic influence, but he will demonstrate that he is totally corrupt, regardless of environment. Conditions of the Millennium are described in Dan 7:24-27, "As for the ten horns, out of this kingdom ten kings will arise; and another will arise after them, and he will be different from the previous ones and will subdue three kings. And he will speak out against the Most High and wear down the saints of the Highest One, and he will intend to make alterations in times and in law; and they will be given into his hand for a time, times, and half a time. But the court will sit for judgment, and his dominion will be taken away, annihilated and destroyed forever. Then the sovereignty, the dominion, and the greatness of all the kingdoms under the whole heaven will be given to the people of the saints of the Highest One; His kingdom will be an everlasting kingdom, and all the dominions will serve and obey Him." The "greatness of all the kingdoms" is what will characterize the Millennium.

1. There will be world peace. National and individual peace will be the fruit of the Messiah's reign, Isa 2:4, 11:6-9, 60:18, 61:7.
2. It will be a fantastic time of inner happiness and joy, Isa 9:3-4, Jer 30:18-19, Zep 3:14-17.
3. The kingdom will be characterized by glory, Isa 4:2, 24:3, 60:1-9.
4. It will be a kingdom manifested by holiness, Isa 1:26-27, Jer 31:23, Eze 36:24-31.
5. The King will personally minister to every need, so that there will be the fullness of "comfort," Isa 12:1-2, Jer 31:23-25, Zec 9:11-12.
6. There will be the administration of perfect justice, Isa 9:7; Jer 23:5, 31:29-30.
7. There will be the most fantastic teaching ministry of God the Holy Spirit, Isa 11:1-2, 41:19-20; Hab 2:14.
8. There will be direct instruction from the Lord Jesus Christ as the King of kings, Isa 29:17-24, 3:14-15; Mic 4:2.
9. The original curse placed upon creation in Gen 2:17-19 will be removed. There will be abundant productivity to the earth; even the animal creation will be changed, Isa 11:6-9, 35:9, 65:25.
10. Sickness will be removed. The ministry of the King as the healer will be seen throughout the Millennium so that sickness and even death will be removed, the exception being capital punishment in dealing with criminal sin, Isa 33:24, Jer 30:17, Eze 34:16.
11. All the deformed are healed as well; if they were deformed at the time of the Second Advent they will experience a complete healing, Isa 29:17-19, Jer 31:8, Mic 4:6-7.
12. There will also be a supernatural work of preservation in the Millennial age through the King, Isa 41:8-14, Eze 34:27, Joe 3:16-17.
13. There will be no social, political, or religious oppression, Isa 14:3-6, 42:6-7; Zec 9:11-12.
14. There be no tragedies of mental illness or infant deaths, Isa 65:20.
15. The earth's population will soar, and sexual relationships in the human race will continue. Children will be born to the believers who began the Millennium, and will still have a sin nature and therefore need salvation, Jer 30:20, 31:29; Eze 47:22; Zec 10:8.
16. There will exist a perfect economic system in which the needs of men are abundantly provided for, Isa 62:9-9, 65:21-23; Jer 31:5.
17. There will be an increase of solar and lunar light. The increased light could be a major cause of the increased productivity of the earth, Isa 4:5, 30:26, 60:19-20; Zec 2:5.
18. There will be a unified language; the language barriers will be removed so that there can be free social intercourse, Zep 3:9.

All the world will unite in the worship of God, and God's presence will be experienced as never before. The Millennium will be 1,000 years of perfect environment and prosperity, and it will demonstrate two things:

1. Mankind cannot be satisfied without a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ.
2. Believers can use Bible doctrine and remain faithful in prosperity.

Very few believers ever survive their first prosperity test; they usually lose their concentration on Bible doctrine. As a result, there will be many unbelievers during the Millennial age who will despise positive believers and join Satan at the end of the 1,000 years.

# THE ASCENSION AND SESSION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

1 Peter 38-22

06/15/03

*Revelation 12:5 And she gave birth to a son, a male child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron; and her child was caught up to God and to His throne.*

One day the Lord Jesus Christ Himself will rule all the nations with a rod of iron. The word “rules” is the Greek verb “poimaino,” an iron scepter. The next phrase, “And her child was caught up to God and to His throne,” is a reference to the ascension (“caught up to God”) and session (“and to His throne”) of Jesus Christ. These principles are vital concerning our Lord’s victory in the angelic conflict. He ascends to heaven in Act 1:6, “So when they had come together, they were asking Him, saying, ‘Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?’ He said to them, ‘It is not for you to know times or epochs which the Father has fixed by His own authority; but you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.’ And after He had said these things, He was lifted up while they were looking on, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.”

The ascension is the doctrine of Christology pertaining to the transfer of our Lord’s true humanity from planet earth to the third heaven in a resurrection body. The session is the doctrine of Christology pertaining to the glorification of His humanity at the right hand of the Father. He was told to sit down at the right hand of the Father, yet deity does not “sit” because deity is omnipresent. This requires an understanding of the hypostatic union—in the person of the incarnate Christ are two natures; He is true humanity and undiminished deity forever in one person.

These two doctrines, the ascension and the session, are based on the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. If Christ remained on earth, He would have had a limited glory, but when He ascended to the third heaven, He became superior to all creation in His humanity, and therefore had unlimited glory. This is why we are given passages such as Heb 1:13, “But to which of the angels has He ever said, ‘Sit at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet?’” After the resurrection of our Lord’s humanity, He remained on earth for 40 days before His ascension, Act 1:1-3, “The first account I composed, Theophilus, about all that Jesus began to do and teach, until the day when He was taken up, after He had by the Holy Spirit given orders to the apostles whom He had chosen. [This is after the upper-room discourse in which the Lord announced of the coming of the “age of no prophecy.”] To these [apostles] He also presented Himself alive, after His suffering, by many convincing proofs, appearing to them over a period of forty days, and speaking of the things concerning the kingdom of God.”

The ascension of Jesus Christ took place on the 40th day in His resurrection body. During this period, many capabilities of the resurrection body were demonstrated:

1. It is recognizable as a human body, Luk 24, Joh 20:25-27.
2. It has substance and can be touched, Luk 24:39-40, Mat 28:9.
3. It can carry on conversations, Joh 20:26, and its voice is recognizable as the individual’s voice in his human body, Joh 20:16.
4. It has flesh and bones, Luk 24:39-40.
5. It can eat food, Luk 24:30,43.
6. It can pass through walls, Joh 20:19,26; Luk 24:26.
7. It can appear and disappear, Luk 24:31.
8. It can fly, Mat 28:10, Act 1:9-10.

In Joh 14:28 the Lord says, "You heard that I said to you, 'I go away, and I will come to you.' If you loved Me, you would have rejoiced, because I go to the Father; for the Father is greater than I." The phrase "I go away" is a reference to the resurrection, ascension, and session of Christ in His glorification at the right hand of His Father. The phrase "I will come to you" is a reference to the indwelling of Jesus Christ, as mentioned in Joh 14:20. The phrase "would have rejoiced" is the Greek verb "chairō," referring to the happiness of God, which disciples should have been experiencing at this moment. The Last Supper should have been a time of great celebration and inner happiness as the Lord was preparing to go to the Cross and fulfill the Father's plan. However, because of their negative volition toward doctrine, the disciples were confused and did not know what was happening. This should have been a time for rejoicing, but instead it was a time of sorrow, because of ignorance of Bible doctrine, concerning the ascension and session of the Lord Jesus Christ.

The ascension of Christ demonstrates the travel capability of the resurrection body, moving with ease through the atmosphere of the earth, the galaxies of the stellar universe, and billions of light-years in an instant, and then entering into the third heaven, the abode of God. Upon arrival in the third heaven, our Lord was seated at the right hand of God the Father—the doctrine of the session. He now receives His third royal patent and the title, "*King of kings, Lord of lords, the bright morning star.*" This was the first time He had a royal title without a royal family. Because His third royal warrant had no accompanying royal family, the Church-age was inserted for the calling out of a royal family. Therefore, this doctrine of the ascension and session is the link between the resurrection of Christ and the Christian way of life.

Something new had to be created to accompany this new third royalty of Jesus Christ, a new Royal Family. His new royalty had to be a new spiritual species functioning under protocol as royalty, as per 2Co 5:17. This is one of the main reasons why we have so much power made available to us, Col 3:1, "*If then you have been raised up with Christ [and you have], keep seeking [keep on desiring to possess or endeavoring to obtain] the things above, where the Christ is at the right hand of the God sitting.*" Why is the Lord Jesus Christ sitting at the right hand of God? The answer is given in many passages throughout the Bible in conjunction with different subjects.

1. In Mat 26:64, Jesus Christ reveals that He is the Son of God by stating that "*the Son of man will be sitting at the right hand of power.*"
2. In Rev 4:2, the Lord Jesus Christ is sitting on the throne as evidence of His kingship: "*Immediately I was in the Spirit; and behold, a throne was standing in heaven, and One sitting on the throne.*"
3. In Psa 110:1 the prophecy is given concerning the Messiah sitting at the right hand of God the Father: "*The Lord says to my Lord: 'Sit at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet.'*"
4. In Mat 22:44, the session is used to reveal to the Pharisees that the Messiah had to become a member of the human race.
5. At Pentecost, Peter cites the session as proof that the Lord Jesus Christ ascended into heaven, Act 2:29-36.
6. The session reveals our Lord's victory in the angelic conflict, Heb 1:13, and the rewards available to winners, Rev 3:21, "*He who overcomes, I will grant to him to sit down with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.*"
7. The session is related to the power of God and the beginning of the Church-age in Eph 1:19b-23, "*These are in accordance with the working of the strength of His might which He brought about in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places, far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age, but also in the one to come. And He put all things in subjection under*

*His feet, and gave Him as head over all things to the church, which is His body, the fulness of Him who fills all in all."*

8. The session is mentioned concerning our position in Christ, Eph 2:4-7, *"But God, being rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead in our transgressions, made us alive together with Christ (by grace you have been saved), and raised us up with Him, and seated us with Him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus, in order that in the ages to come He might show the surpassing riches of His grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus."*
9. The session mentioned is concerning the intercessory ministry of Jesus Christ, Rom 8:34, *"Who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is He who died, yes, rather who was raised, who is at the right hand of God, who also intercedes for us."*
10. The session is mentioned concerning His power to save and forgive sin in Act 5:31, *"He is the one whom God exalted to His right hand as a Prince and a Savior, to grant repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins."*
11. The session is mentioned concerning the Hypostatic Union in Heb 1:3, *"And He is the radiance of His glory and the exact representation of His nature, and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high."*
12. The session is mentioned in relationship to His priesthood in Heb 8:1, *"We have such a high priest, who has taken His seat at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens."*
13. The session is mentioned concerning the efficacy of His work on the Cross, Heb 10:12, *"But He, having offered one sacrifice for sins for all time, sat down at the right hand of God."*
14. The session is important to our occupation with Christ, Heb 12:2, *"Fixing our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the Cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."*
15. The session came with His victory in the angelic conflict, when He returned from Hades 1Pe 3:18-22, *"For Christ also died for sins once for all, the just for the unjust, in order that He might bring us to God, having been put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit; in which also He went and made proclamation to the spirits now in prison, who once were disobedient, when the patience of God kept waiting in the days of Noah, during the construction of the ark, in which a few, that is, eight persons, were brought safely through the water. And corresponding to that, baptism now saves you—not the removal of dirt from the flesh, but an appeal to God for a good conscience—through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who is at the right hand of God, having gone into heaven, after angels and authorities and powers had been subjected to Him."*

There are two Christological dispensations (a period of time on earth in which Christ actually indwells the body of a human being).

1. The great power experiment of the Hypostatic Union, which took place from the birth of Christ in 4 B.C. to His resurrection and ascension in A.D. 30, a period of 33 years. This is the incarnation, or First Advent, of our Lord Jesus Christ, the time of the Gospels.
2. The great power experiment of the Church-age, which lasts from the Day of Pentecost in A.D. 30 until the Rapture of the Church, the time of which is unknown by all but God. It is divided into two periods:
  - A. The pre-Canon period, the time of the Book of *Acts* and temporary spiritual gifts, A.D. 30-96.
  - B. The post-Canon period (the present) lasts from A.D. 96 to the Rapture of the Church. This is the era of the New Testament epistles and permanent spiritual gifts.

These were the only two dispensations when the Lord Jesus Christ indwelt humanity. Dispensations are periods of time in human history expressed in terms of divine revelation; they are divine



categories of human history. Therefore, dispensations are both the divine outline and the divine interpretation of human history. Dispensational truth is the vehicle by which believers living at a specific time in history can orient to God's will, plan, and purpose for their lives.

God's plan is not the same for every dispensation; in fact, it is quite different. In every dispensation, God has a plan for believers, and in grace He provides the means for executing that plan. We must understand the other dispensations and then learn why only one dispensation is called the "dispensation of grace," Eph 3:1-10, *"For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles if indeed you have heard of the stewardship [oikonomian, meaning dispensation] of God's grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. And by referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets in the Spirit; to be specific, that the Gentiles are fellow heirs and fellow members of the body, and fellow partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel, of which I was made a minister, according to the gift of God's grace which was given to me according to the working of His power. To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ, and to bring to light what is the administration [oikonomia] of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things; in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.*

The dispensation of the Gentiles began with the creation of mankind and continued to the Exodus. It was an era of positive volition from the creation of man until the fall in the Garden of Eden era. Here human volition and marriage both failed miserably under perfect environment. Both volition and marriage are divine institutions, but man chose to reject the divine provision. The era of negative volition extended from the fall of man to Abraham. Then came the era of the patriarchs, from Abraham to Moses, with the creation of the new racial species, the Jewish race, which began with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. This dispensation included both Jews and Gentiles without any client nation function. The dispensation of Israel and the Jews was in effect from the Exodus to the birth of Christ (1441 to 4 B.C). Then came the Christocentric dispensations—the Hypostatic Union, from the birth of Christ to His resurrection and ascension, and the Church-age, from the Day of Pentecost in A.D. 30 until the Rapture of the Church. This is to be followed by the Eschatological dispensations, the Tribulation and the Millennium.

The Tribulation dispensation is the great power struggle from the Rapture of the Church to the Second Advent, also called Daniel's 70<sup>th</sup> week, and is also the end of the Jewish Age. The Millennial reign of Christ begins at His Second Advent and will be the final 1,000 years of human history. It is the time of the restoration of Israel and the fulfillment of all the unconditional covenants; Israel will again be the client nation in history, and it is a time of perfect environment on the earth. It is preceded by the judgment of the Baptism of Fire, so that only believers will enter the Millennium. At the end of the Millennium will come the judgment of unbelievers and fallen angels. This period includes:

1. The Second Advent of Christ.
2. The judgment of the human race coming out of the Tribulation, and the Baptism of the Fire, in which there are two separate judgments—that of the Gentiles and that of the Jews.
3. The restoration of Israel.
4. The Millennial rule of Jesus Christ.
5. The Gog Revolution.
6. The final judgments of history—the judgment of fallen angels, who are cast into the Lake of Fire, and the resurrection and judgment of all unbelievers at the Great White Throne, who are also cast into the Lake of Fire.

7. The eternal state, which includes (1) all believers in resurrection bodies forever, (2) the destruction of the present universe, and (3) the creation of a new universe.

# THE ASCENSION AND SESSION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 2

Hebrews 1  
06/22/03

We are continuing our study of dispensations and the doctrine of the Ascension and Session in Rev 12:5, “*And her child was caught up to God and to His throne.*” As we noted, the phrase “caught up to God” is a reference to the ascension, and the phrase “to His throne” is a reference to the session. It is important for Church-age believers understand the different dispensations and how they relate to the Resurrection, Ascension, and Session of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Col 1:24-27 Now I rejoice in my sufferings for your sake, and in my flesh I do my share on behalf of His body [the Church] in filling up that which is lacking in Christ’s afflictions. Of this church I was made a minister according to the dispensation from God bestowed on me for your benefit that I might fully carry out the preaching of the word of God, that is the mystery which has been hidden from the past ages and generations; but has now been manifested to his saints, to whom God willed to make known what is the glorious riches of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the confidence of the glory.*

The dispensation of the *Gentiles* began with the creation of mankind (Gen 1:26) and continued through the Fall (Gen 3:24) to the Exodus (after the Egyptian Bondage of Exo 14). The *era of positive volition* (in the Garden of Eden) lasted from the creation of man until the Fall. Here human volition and marriage both failed miserably under perfect environment. Both volition and marriage are divine institutions, but man chose to reject the divine provision. The era of negative volition took place from the fall of man to Abraham. This was followed by the era of the patriarchs from Abraham to Moses.

Theocentric		Christocentric		Eschatological	
Gentiles	Israel	Hypostatic Union	Church	Tribulation	Millennium

The Gentiles began with the three sons of Noah—Shem, Ham, and Japheth. This era sees the creation of the new racial species, the Jewish race, which began with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. It includes the history of the Jews from Abraham to Moses. Abraham became the father of the new racial species, created by God, when he was circumcised at age 99; this was the demonstration of his use of the faith-rest drill. (We do not circumcise children today as a part of the spiritual life because we live in a different dispensation.) This dispensation included both Jews and Gentiles without a client nation. The dispensation of the Jews, or Israel, runs from the Exodus to the birth of Christ, 1441 – 4 B.C. The two *Christocentric* dispensations are taught in the New Testament:

1. The great power experiment of the Hypostatic Union runs from the birth of Christ to the resurrection and ascension of Christ, a period of 33 years. This is the time of the incarnation or First Advent of our Lord Jesus Christ.
2. The great power experiment of the Church-age runs from the day of Pentecost in A.D. 30 until the Rapture of the Church, the time of which is unknown by all but God.

There are two *Eschatological* dispensations:

1. The Tribulation (called the “Doomsday Dispensation”) is the great power struggle from the Rapture of the Church to the Second Advent, also called Daniel’s 70<sup>th</sup> week, and is a seven-year period marking the end of the Jewish Age. In the Book of *Revelation*, chapter 6, it is also classified as the time of Satan’s desperation. It is prophesied in the Old Testament as well as by our Lord in the *Olivet Discourse* of Mat 24-25, in most of His parables, and by John in the Book of *Revelation*, chapters 6–19.
2. The Millennial reign of Christ runs from the Second Advent of Christ to the end of human history and lasts 1,000 years. It is the time of the restoration of Israel and the fulfillment of

Israel's unconditional covenants. Israel will again be the client nation in history for the last 1,000 years. It is also a time of perfect environment on the earth. It is preceded by the judgment of the Baptism of Fire, so that only believers will enter the Millennium. At the end of the Millennium is the judgment of unbelievers and fallen angels.

This period includes:

1. The Second Advent of Christ.
2. The judgment of the human race coming out of the Tribulation, and the Baptism of the Fire, in which there are two separate judgments—that of the Gentiles and that of the Jews.
3. The restoration of Israel.
4. The Millennial rule of Jesus Christ.
5. The Gog Revolution.
6. The final judgments of history—the judgment of fallen angels, who are cast into the Lake of Fire, and the resurrection and judgment of all unbelievers at the Great White Throne, who are also cast into the Lake of Fire.
7. The eternal state, which includes (1) all believers in resurrection bodies forever, (2) the destruction of the present universe, and (3) the creation of a new universe.

The Resurrection, Ascension, and Session all deal with the true humanity of Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ is undiminished deity and true humanity in one person forever. Just as only the humanity of Christ could provide our so-great salvation by receiving the judgment for our sins in His own body, so only the humanity of Christ could be resurrected, ascended, and seated at the right hand of God the Father.

The humanity of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union is now exalted and glorified at the right hand of the Father where He is now seated, Act 2:32-35, *"This Jesus God raised up again, to which we are all witnesses. Therefore having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, He has poured forth this which you both see and hear. For it was not David who ascended into heaven, but he himself says: 'The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet.'"* We read in Act 5:30-31, *"The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom you had put to death by hanging Him on a cross. He is the One Whom God has exalted at His right hand as Prince and Savior."*

The Ascension and Session is not only related to the Hypostatic Union, but is also closely related to the angelic conflict, Heb 1:1-3, *"God, after He spoke long ago to the fathers in the prophets in many portions and in many ways, in these last days has spoken to us in His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the world. And He is the radiance of His glory and the exact representation [image] of His [God the Father's] nature, and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high."* Note that during the entire period of the Hypostatic Union on earth, from the baby in the cradle to the Resurrection, Ascension, and Session, our Lord was still holding the universe together by the word of His power. Notice the statement at the end of verse 3, *"When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high";* verse 4 goes on, *"Having become as much better than the angels, as He has inherited a more excellent title than they."* In His session, the humanity of Christ inherited a greater title than any angelic creature including any seraphim or cherubim angels, Heb 1:5-6, *"For to which of the angels did He [God the Father] ever say, 'Thou art My Son, today I have begotten Thee'? And again, 'I will be a Father to Him and He shall be a Son to Me'? And when He again brings the first-born into the world [the Second Coming], He says, 'And let all the angels of God worship Him.'"*

This is the climax of the *triumphal procession*, our Lord's victorious parade after His death, burial and resurrection, when He marched through light years of space in the second heaven (the stellar universe). The triumphal procession terminated with the Father's command to *"Sit at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet."* This procession included all the Old

Testament saints being transferred from Paradise to the third heaven, Eph 4:8, *“There-fore, it [the Old Testament] says [Psa 68:18], ‘When He ascended into heaven [the third heaven], He led a host of captives in a triumphal procession from a state of captivity, and He gave spiritual gifts to men.’”*

*Heb 1:7-8,13 And [speaking] of the angels He says, “Who makes His angels winds, and His ministers a flame of fire.” But of the Son He says, “Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever, and the righteous scepter is the scepter of His kingdom...” But to which of the angels has He ever said, “Sit at my right hand, until I make thine enemies a footstool for thy feet”?*

God the Father never said this to any angelic creature; He only said it to *a member of the human race*, the Lord Jesus Christ. This is significant because it means that although we are now inferior to angels in our human bodies on earth, we will be superior to angels in our resurrection bodies in the future. This was established with our Lord’s session. The most beautiful creature who ever had a body is Satan himself, the devil, Lucifer, the Son of the morning, Heylel, and you will have a far greater body than he or any other angel.

Peter describes the session in 1Pe 3:22, *“Jesus Christ is at the right hand of God, having gone into heaven, after angels and authorities and powers had been subjected to Him.”* With the resurrection of Jesus Christ, all angelic creatures, including fallen angels, are subordinated to Him *in His humanity!* In His deity, Jesus Christ is the Creator of angels, Psa 148:5. In His humanity, He was made lower than angels, Heb 2:7, but now, in His resurrection, He is higher than angels *in His humanity*. One day, because of positional truth (“in Christ”), we will share that privilege experientially. Being in union with Christ, we are already *positionally* higher than angels; in resurrection bodies, we will be *experientially* and physically higher than angels.

In Eph 1:22, *“He [God the Father] has subordinated all [angelic creatures] under His feet. Furthermore, He appointed Him [Jesus Christ] ruler over all things to the church.”* This establishes the link between the two Christocentric dispensations. When our Lord received His third royal title, He did not have a royal family, therefore, the Church-age was inserted into history. The Church-age was a mystery age because we have so much more that has been given to us, more than any Old Testament, Tribulational, or Millennial saint. We have unique privileges that are fantastic and that have never existed before and will never exist again after the Rapture of the Church.

A second Christocentric dispensation had to be instituted to provide a royal family for our Lord’s third royal patent. Furthermore, Israel had rejected Jesus Christ as their Messiah and King. Consequently, the Messianic kingdom is postponed until the Second Advent of Christ. In the meantime, the great power demonstration of the Hypostatic union has been parlayed into the great power demonstration of the Church-age. During the Church-age, there are no Jewish client nations; the next Jewish client nation will not exist until the Second Advent of Christ. We live in the times of the Gentiles, which means only a Gentile nation can be a client nation to God. At the present time, the United States of America is a Gentile client nation to God.

Paul gives a great description of the session, beginning in Heb 1:1-4, *“God, after He spoke long ago to the fathers in the prophets in many portions and in many ways, In these last days has spoken to us in His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the world. And He is the radiance of His glory and the exact representation [image] of His [God the Father’s] nature, and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification of sins, He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high; having become as much better than the angels, as He has inherited a more excellent name [onoma, title] than they.”* The phrase “having become” is the Greek word *gomenos*, and it means to become something you were not before. In His humanity our Lord was originally made lower than angels (Heb 2:7), however, this verse states that in His humanity He became something that He never was before as a member of the human race; He became greater than the angels. In Heb 1:4, the humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ did not merely inherit a new name, but a new “onoma,” a new title, authority, fame, and reputation. And the proof, or “stamp of approval,” of

this is the doctrine is found in the phrase “Sit down at my right hand, until I make thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet.” The verb for “has inherited” is “kekleronomeken” meaning to be an heir, to inherit, and to obtain; the noun form is “kleronomeo,” which means one who receives the property of one who died, or one who inherits a rank, title, and office. The Lord Jesus Christ has inherited:

1. A new rank. In His humanity, He is now seated at the right hand of God, the highest place of authority in the universe, Mat 28:18, *“And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, ‘All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth.’”*
2. A new title. He is now the King of kings and Lord of Lords, 1Ti 6:15; Rev 17:14, 19:16.
3. A new office. Our Lord is appointed a high priest by God the Father, Heb 5:4-10, 6:20. *Rom 8:16-17 The Spirit himself bears witness with our spirit [our human spirit] that we are children of God, and if children, heirs also, heirs of God and fellow heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him in order that we may also be glorified with Him.*

Because of our union with the Lord Jesus Christ, who is seated at the right hand of God and victorious in the angelic conflict, we also have inherited a new rank, title, and an office:

1. We have been made kings, Rev 1:5, 5:10.
2. We have a new title—we are children of God, His beloved sons, Eph 1:6, Mat 3:17, 1Jo 3:1, *“See how great a love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called children of God; and such we are.”*
3. We have a new office—we are royal priests, 1Pe 2:5,9.

And what made all of this a reality? The doctrine of the Session.

We now see the following principles in this chapter of Hebrews:

1. When the Lord Jesus Christ sat down at the right hand of God, this revealed that He was greater than angels because He is the heir of all things and the Creator of the universe, Heb 1:1-2.
2. He is the expression of the nature of God, the sustainer of the universe He created, and the sacrifice that paid for sin, Heb 1:3.
3. He has a better name and nature than angels, Heb 1:4.
4. He is worshipped by angels, Heb 1:6.
5. He is the Creator and Master of angels, Heb 1:7.
6. He has an eternal throne and is anointed with the Holy Spirit, Heb 1:8-9.
7. He is unchangeable, Heb 1:10.
8. He is seated at God’s right hand, Heb 1:13.
9. Because of our union with Him, elect angels serve us, Heb 1:14.

This is all the direct result of the doctrine of the Ascension and Session.

# THE ASCENSION AND SESSION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 3

Hebrews 2:1-4

06/29/03

The resurrection, ascension, and session are based on the strategic victory of our Lord in the angelic conflict. When the Lord Jesus Christ sat down at the right hand of God, He revealed that He was better than angels *in His humanity*. He is the heir of all things and the creator of the universe (Heb 1:1-2), has a better name and nature than angels (Heb 1:4), is worshipped by angels (Heb 1:6), is the creator and master of angels (Heb 1:7), has an eternal throne and is anointed with the Holy Spirit (Heb 1:8-9), is unchangeable (Heb 1:10), and is seated at God's right hand (Heb 1:13). Because of our union with Him elect angels serve us right now (Heb 1:14). These principles are all directly related to the doctrine of the ascension and session. Heb 2:1 continues, *"For this reason [the angelic conflict] we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, lest we drift away from it."* When God sentenced Satan and all the fallen angels to the lake of fire, it was inevitable that Satan would appeal the sentence and at the same time attack and malign the character of God. The actual appeal of Satan is unknown to us, for God has not seen fit to record it for us. Perhaps his blasphemous argument was, *"How can a loving God put His own creatures into the lake of fire forever?"* This is a false teaching that many Christians believe today; they claim that the lake of fire is merely a figure of speech.

The fact that an appeal was filed by Satan is presumed from the lapse of time between the *passing* of the sentence on fallen angels in eternity past (Mat 25:41) and the *execution* of that sentence at the end of time (Rev 20:10). Between these two verses an appeal trial is occurring in human history.

*Mat 25:41 "Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels.'"*

*Rev 20:10 And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.*

As a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ, you can be a vital factor in this appeal trial, as long as you rely on the power of God. Human history is the courtroom for the appeal trial, and mankind was created for this trial.

In Heb 2:1, after the writer establishes the importance of understanding the ascension and session of the Lord Jesus Christ in chapter 1, he says in Heb 2:1, *"For this reason..."* Because of the fallen angels being under judgment and the human race being elevated above angels, the human race is being warned not to do what the fallen angels have done—to reject the Messiah and the plan of God, Heb 2:1, *"For this reason we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, lest we drift away from it."* The Greek verb translated "pay much closer attention" is *"prosechein."* "Pros" means face-to-face, and here it means looking the subject directly in the face; *"echo"* means to have and to hold. Therefore, the verb means to apply the mind to something, or to concentrate on the subject, i.e., the doctrine being taught. Rather than being so occupied with your own personal life and petty desires, learn to concentrate on the real reason you are alive, which is to give glory to God, Isa 43:7, Isa 48:11. Grace always precedes judgment. You have eternal security, but that does not mean that you can live like hell and ignore God without consequences in time.

*Rom 11:13-22 But I am speaking to you who are Gentiles. Inasmuch then as I am an apostle of Gentiles, I magnify my ministry, if somehow I might move to jealousy my fellow countrymen and save some of them. For if their rejection be the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead? And if the first piece of dough be holy, the lump is also; and if the root be holy, the branches are too. But if some of the*

*branches were broken off, and you, being a wild olive, were grafted in among them and became partaker with them of the rich root of the olive tree, do not be arrogant toward the branches; but if you are arrogant, remember that it is not you who supports the root, but the root supports you. You will say then, "Branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in." Quite right, they were broken off for their unbelief, but you stand by your faith. Do not be conceited, but fear; for if God did not spare the natural branches, neither will He spare you. Behold then the kindness and severity of God; to those who fell, severity, but to you, God's kindness, if you continue in His kindness; otherwise you also will be cut off.*

Heb 2:1 goes on to say, *"For this reason we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, lest we drift away from it."* This is a reference to hearing doctrine, God's Word, and the Greek verb for "drift away" is *"pararrhomen,"* which means to let the doctrine drift past or flow by you. Bible doctrine is being presented, but you are ignoring it. There are three ways in which believers reject Bible doctrine:

1. Refusing to hear the teaching of doctrine on a consistent basis.
2. Hearing the teaching of Bible doctrine but refusing to metabolize it, therefore failing to convert *gnosis* (knowledge) into *epignosis* (wisdom).
3. Metabolizing doctrine in one's soul but not applying it, so that the doctrine becomes unusable or forgotten.

Drifting away from doctrine is not intentional; it happens slowly.

Our passage continues in Heb 2:2-3, *"For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense, how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who heard."* Angels were used by God to bring doctrine to men, Act 7:38,53, but as a result of the session, man is now used by God to bring doctrine to men and angels, Eph 3:10, *"In order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places."*

*"Every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense..."* The word "transgression" is the Greek noun *"parabasis,"* which means stepping over the line, or violating God's perfect laws; this goes beyond sin as we know it. "Disobedience" is the Greek noun *"parakoe,"* which refers to disobedience that results from neglecting to hear doctrine and letting these fantastic principles drift by. In the Old Testament, obedience is described, not as doing, but as hearing first, and disobedience is described as refusing to hear, Exo 15:26, 19:5,8; 23:22; Jos 1:18; Isa 28:12, 30:9; Jer 11:10, 32:23, 35:16-17. In Jer 11:10 we read, *"They have turned back to the iniquities of their ancestors who refused to hear My words."* It has the connotation of failing to hear due to carelessness because of a desire for our own will. Many individuals put off hearing the Word of God, always assuming that it will also be there when they need it. However, the Bible teaches that when believers reject doctrine over a long period of time, God allows a famine of doctrine in their lives, Amo 8:11-12, *"Behold, days are coming," declares the Lord God, "when I will send a famine on the land, not a famine for bread or a thirst for water, but rather for hearing the words of the Lord. And people will stagger from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east; they will go to and fro to seek the word of the Lord, but they will not find it."*

Never become familiar with God's Word or think that it will always be available everywhere. Be careful you do not drift away. If we as believers stay out of fellowship for an extended length of time, and refuse to rebound and recover, we are said to be:

1. An enemy of the Cross (the finished work of Christ), Phi 3:18.
2. An enemy of God, Jam 4:4.
3. A hater of God, Joh 15:23.
4. Double-minded, Jam 4:8.
5. Anti-Christ, 1Jo 2:18,22, 4:3; 2Jo 7.



6. Carnal, Rom 8:7, 1Co 3:1-2.
7. A disciple of the devil, 1Jo 3:8,10.
8. Drifting off course from grace, Gal 5:4.
9. Falling from grace, Heb 12:15.
10. A tortured and unstable soul, 2Pe 2:7-8,14.
11. Shipwrecked, 1Ti 1:19.

In Heb 2:1-3, we see the angelic conflict in action. God allows the fallen angels to become examples to fallen man of His grace. The recompense is just; God is absolutely right and just in His judgment.

1. God owes the fallen angels the lake of fire, but they are not there at the present time. He owes them retroactive “back wages,” and He will pay His debt (“just recompense”).
2. Human history is the space between Satan’s trial and his conviction, and the passing and the execution of the sentence.
3. The passing of the sentence is the eternal fire prepared for the devil and His angels before human history, Mat 25:41.
4. The execution of the sentence is Rev 20:10.
5. The sentence was passed before human history; it will be executed at the consummation of human history.
6. Because Satan appealed His sentence before human history, man was then created as a third party to show Satan that His appeal is not justified.
7. Human history demonstrates that God is righteous, just, and perfect; therefore, God is glorified by the creation of man, Rev 4:11, Isa 43:21.

Heb 2:3 literally says that just as the fallen angels are doomed, so will all unbelieving humans be doomed: “How shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who heard.” The Greek verb for “neglect” is “amelesantes,” which means to be careless toward, make light of, disregard, be unconcerned, or neglect. And what is the human race warned not to disregard? “So great a salvation” refers to our Lord’s finished work on the Cross. The apostles heard Christ and passed down His message. We know that the fallen angels received judgment because of such passages as Mat 25:41 and Jud 1:6, “And angels who did not keep their own domain, but abandoned their proper abode, He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day.” Peter writes in 2Pe 2:4, “For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment...”

*Heb 2:2-4 For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience [in the angelic realm] received a just recompense, how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who heard, God also bearing witness with them, both by signs and wonders and by various miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will.*

Remember that in 1Co 1:22, “Indeed Jews ask for signs,” but in, Joh 1:11 “He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him.” There were many signs of the Messiah, including:

- The virgin birth, Isa 7:14.
- Tongues as a sign to unbelievers, Isa 28:11.
- The two deaths of Christ (physical and spiritual), Isa 53:9.

In spite of all the signs and wonders, the Jews rejected their Messiah.

In Heb 2:5 we are brought right back to our subject of the session and the glorification of our Lord’s humanity: “For He did not subject to angels the world to come, concerning which we are speaking.” During the Millennium no angel will be in rulership. In the Church-age, Satan and His angels reign, but in the Millennium, man will rule, that Man being Jesus Christ, the Son of David. Heb 2:6 says,

*“But one has testified somewhere [David in Psa 8:4-6], ‘What is man, that Thou rememberest him?’”* The Greek word for “remember” is *“mimneske,”* which means to recall to mind, or to remember in an affectionate way. The phrase “son of man” here refers to the descendants of Adam (although the term “son of man” generally refers to Jesus Christ).

Heb 2:7 continues, “Thou hast made him for a little while lower than the angels; Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor, and hast appointed him over the works of Thy hands.” Here is the divine strategy. Out of the lowest, God shall bring the highest. Out of the insignificant, God shall bring the significant. In fact, He shall Himself condescend to become a member of this lower creation, the human race, Heb 2:9, “But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.” God will reach down below the level man was created and bring forth new sons who will be with Him for all eternity. Is it any wonder that Paul said in Rom 11:33, “Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgments and unfathomable His ways!”

Out of the creation of a lower creature called “man” will come the greatest glory to God and the full and total victory in the invisible war of the angelic conflict. Imagine back in Genesis chapter one, as day succeeded day in the six-day restoration of the earth, that Satan must have been watching every act with serious and growing interest. Dry land appeared out of the waste of waters, and the seas began to function once again. Trees, flowers, and grass appeared in a world that had been shrouded in horror and darkness. The sun, moon, and stars became visible once again as the judgment was dispelled. Thousands of creatures began to fill the sea. The chirping of birds filled the air. Imagine how pride stimulated Satan’s envy, yet, to this point, he saw nothing to excite his jealousy, for all these birds and animals had body and life, but no spirit. And he knew that there was no creature here that could challenge the power and authority he had once possessed in this domain.

However, on the sixth day, God created man in His own image, Gen 1:26-28, “Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.’ And God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. And God blessed them; and God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.’” There must have been an almost instant awareness in the mind of Satan that here was his rival at last. Man awoke to find himself a creature of noble beauty and wisdom, and to be informed that he was to have dominion over all the renewed earth, and we can be sure that Satan was not far away. For the first time Satan heard the authority over the earth being given to someone else.

Little did man realize at the time, that he was about to be entered into this invisible war, and that he would be an important weapon. God was choosing man as the arm that would defeat Satan, and replace him in the government of the universe. Out of man Christ would come, and it would be through certain chosen members of the human race that God would proclaim the defeat of Satan to both the elect and fallen angels.

Imagine what must have been going through the mind of Satan as he saw the first man and woman placed on this earth. The earth had been Satan’s kingdom; God had set him in authority, Eze 28:14. Out of the creation of a lower creature called man will come the greatest glory to God, and the full and complete victory in the invisible war of the angelic conflict.

# THE ASCENSION AND SESSION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 4

1 Corinthians 15:45-49

07/06/03

In our study of the resurrection, ascension, and session of our Lord Jesus Christ, we have seen that when the Lord Jesus Christ sat down at the right hand of God, He revealed that He was now greater than the angels *in His humanity*. He is the heir of all things and the creator of the universe (Heb 1:1-2), has a better name and nature than angels (Heb 1:4), is worshipped by angels (Heb 1:6), is the creator and master of angels (Heb 1:7), has an eternal throne and is anointed with the Holy Spirit (Heb 1:8-9), is unchangeable (Heb 1:10), and is seated at God's right hand (Heb 1:13). Because of our union with Him elect angels serve us right now (Heb 1:14).

*Heb 2:1-8 For this reason [because of the angelic conflict and the fact that the Lord Jesus Christ is seated at the right hand of God and exalted above all angelic creatures] we must pay much closer attention to what we have heard, lest we drift away from it [let this doctrine drift past or flow by us]. For if the word spoken through angels proved unalterable, and every transgression and disobedience [in the angelic realm] received a just recompense, how shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation? After it was at the first spoken through the Lord, it was confirmed to us by those who heard, God also bearing witness with them, both by signs and wonders and by various miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will. For He did not subject to angels the world to come, concerning which we are speaking. But one has testified somewhere [David in Psa 8:4-6], "What is man, that Thou rememberest him? Thou hast made him for a little while lower than the angels; Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor, and hast appointed him over the works of Thy hands; Thou hast put all things in subjection under His feet [the Lord Jesus Christ]." For in subjecting all things to him, he left nothing that is not subject to him. But now we do not yet see all things subjected to him.*

In verse 7 we see the first Adam who failed, and in verse 8 we see the last Adam who succeeded. This is a reference to the resurrection of Jesus Christ whereby all angelic creatures, elect and fallen, are subordinated to Him in His humanity. In His deity, Jesus Christ is the *creator* of angels but, in His humanity, He was made *lower* than angels, Heb 2:7. Now, in His resurrection, He is higher than angels even in His humanity. One day, in our resurrection body, we will share that same privilege experientially.

1Co 15:45-49 describes the only two members of the human race who came into the world under conditions of perfection without an old sin nature—the first Adam, who fell and lost it all, and the last Adam, who regained everything and provided our salvation: *"So also it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul.' The last Adam [the Lord Jesus Christ in His humanity] became a life-giving spirit. However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural [Adam came before the Lord Jesus Christ]; then the spiritual. The first man [Adam] is from the earth, earthy; the second man [the Lord Jesus Christ] is from heaven. As is the earthy [Adam was dead in sin], so also are those who are earthy [those in Adam die], and as is the heavenly [Christ is alive], so also are those who are heavenly [those in Christ will be made alive], and just as we have borne the image of the earthy [the nature of Adam, the old sin nature], we shall also bear the image of the heavenly [the new nature given to those who are born again]."*

In Heb 2:7, we have a description of the first Adam: *"Thou hast made him [man] for a little while lower than the angels."* The first Adam was made inferior to angels, both elect and fallen. The only way man becomes *superior* to angels is through union with the Lord Jesus Christ, who is seated at the right

hand of God the Father. This is one of the principles behind Eph 2:6, *“And He [God the Father] raised us up with Him [Jesus Christ], and seated us with Him in the heavenly places, in Christ Jesus.”* Only through regeneration and positional truth can man become superior to angels. This is why Satan has blinded the church from the real meaning of the baptism of the Spirit. He is the most brilliant angel and hates anyone who is greater than him. Phi 3:21 and 1Co 15:53 teach that our resurrected body is greater than the angels’, which is why the Church is the first to go up in the rapture to receive their resurrected bodies at the Bema Seat Judgment!

In Deu 32:4 Moses writes, *“The rock! His work is perfect, for all his ways are just; a God of faithfulness and without injustice, righteous and upright is He.”* Originally, God created man perfect, without sin; Heb 2:7 says, *“Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor.”* The Greek word for “crowned” is *estephanos*, meaning to adorn with an honorary crown, to bestow the approval of God. In the *aorist tense* it speaks of the point of time when God created the first Adam. The *active voice* indicates that God the Father produced the action of the verb; He crowned the original man with glory and honor. The *indicative mood* leaves no doubt about the reality of the fact that God did this. Man was originally created perfect, but through his free will, he fell.

In Gen 1:28-30, God gave the first Adam dominion over creation. He instructed him to *“Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.”* The first Adam, who was created to resolve the angelic conflict, possessed glory and honor, but he lost it all when he fell. In Heb 2:7-9, *“Thou hast made him for a little while lower than the angels; Thou hast crowned him with glory and honor, and hast appointed him over the works of Thy hands; Thou hast put all things in subjection under His feet. For in subjecting all things to Him, He left nothing that is not subject to Him. But now we do not yet see all things subjected to Him. But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.* This next phrase, *“crowned with glory and honor,”* refers to the birth of the Lord Jesus Christ, which was just like the creation of the first Adam, in that both came into the world sinless. The difference is that the first Adam *lost* his glory and honor; the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ, *built* upon His glory and honor.

Because the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ, kept His glory and honor, mankind now has the privilege to share in the Lord’s victory through union with Him! We have positional truth in the first Adam; we also have positional truth in the last Adam, 1Co 15:22, *“In Adam all die, in Christ shall all be made alive.”* The victory of the last Adam is revealed in Heb 2:8, *“Thou hast put all things in subjection under His feet. For in subjecting all things to Him, He left nothing that is not subject to Him.”* This is a reference to the Millennium, when Christ, the last Adam, will rule. At the Second Coming, when the Millennial reign of Christ begins, there will be believers on earth with no demons and unbelievers (because of the baptism of fire, Mat 24:40-41). We are being prepared to rule with the Lord during His Millennial reign. Some will rule ten cities, some five, and some will “run errands” and be glad to do so. During the Millennial reign, the saints will rule in resurrection bodies just as the unseen forces who run the world now. We will take the place of fallen angels as the rulers of the world.

“Subjecting all things to Him” refers to the human race, the angelic race, weather, animal life, plant life, and all nature. The phrase “He left nothing that is not subject to Him” refers to the baptism of fire where all that is against Christ will be removed from the earth. In Heb 2:7, we went back to the first Adam in the garden of Eden; in Heb 2:8, we went forward to the last Adam in the Millennial reign; now, in Heb 2:9, we go back to the Church-age.

*Heb 2:9 But we do see Him who has been made for a little while lower than the angels, namely, Jesus, because of the suffering of death crowned with glory and honor, that by the grace of God He might taste death for everyone.*

*Acts 5:31 “He is the one whom God has exalted at His right hand as Prince and Savior.”*

*Phi 2:9 "Therefore also, God has highly exalted Him and given Him a title which is above every title, that at the title of Jesus every knee should bow and every tongue should confess that Jesus is Lord to the glory of the Father."*

The ascension and session are not only related to the Hypostatic union, but also to the angelic conflict. The fact that the resurrection, ascension, and session are based on our Lord's strategic victory is the subject of Heb 1-2. This strategic victory of the angelic conflict, which the Lord Jesus Christ won in the *great power demonstration* of the Hypostatic Union, is related to the award of His *third royal patent*. His title is "King of kings, Lord of lords, bright morning star." His Royal Family, which is all Church-age believers, is in the process of being completed. You are more than a child of God; you are a *royal child* of God.

The earth was Satan's kingdom; God had set him in authority over it in Eze 28:14. Moreover, Satan had never been dispossessed of the earth even in his confinement; he had been placed on the earth. This motivated Satan's first attack on man, which was an attack on God Himself. God had placed an offensive force in the midst of the enemy-held territory of planet earth, and to attack man was to attack the One who had placed him there. However, the attack would end, as all other satanic attacks, with dust in the mouth for Satan. For the battle of the Garden of Eden, though on the surface a *victory* for Satan, was in reality the beginning of his ultimate defeat, because it contained the *seed* from which would develop the most shameful phases of his ultimate defeat, the seed of Christ.

*Gen 3:14-15 And the Lord God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, cursed are you more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly shall you go, and dust shall you eat all the days of your life; and I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head, and you shall bruise him on the heel." Within this chapter are found almost all the great doctrines which appear in the rest of the Bible. This is where the drama of the invisible war begins on the stage of human history.*

Satan's tactics are easy to see in the account of the temptation and fall. He had to begin with a forward attack on the Word of God and the goodness of God. It would have been impossible to reach man apart from the destruction of his confidence in the mind and heart of the Creator. Satan first attacked the Word of God when he said, "Indeed, has God said?" This was a subtle question of doubt concerning the authenticity and validity of God's Word, and he uses this same tactic today. He instills doubt in God's people concerning what the Word of God really says, as seen in the parable of the sower. As soon as the seed (the Word of God) is sown, the enemy comes to snatch away the seed that has been sown, Luk 8:12, "*And those beside the road are those who have heard; then the devil comes and takes away the word from their heart, so that they may not believe and be delivered.*" It is the Garden of Eden all over again, and in this phase of the battle Satan's deceptions have found success. Beginning with Eve, Satan has been successful to the extent that the majority of believers have been detached from the only source of spiritual life, the Word of God. When their only defense is destroyed, they are open to all attacks and are sure to be defeated. Doubt comes from lack of doctrine or failing to believe the doctrine you have, as in Mat 14:31, "*O you of little faith [doctrine], why did you doubt?*" Paul says in Rom 14:23, "*Whatever is not from faith is sin.*"

In Gen 3, we also learn of the subtle devices of our enemy, the devil, who possessed the serpent and deceived the woman, as he denies the Word of God outright in Gen 3:4, "*And the serpent said to the woman, 'You surely shall not die!'*" In Gen 3:7 we also see the universal tendency of human nature to cover its own moral shame by a device of man's own handiwork: "*Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.*" In Gen 3:8 we discover the spiritual effects of sin—man trying to flee from God: "*And they heard the sound of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden.*" In

Gen 3:9, we see God searching for fallen man while fallen man hides from God: *“Then the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, ‘Where are you?’”* God has never ceased to seek for fallen man, even though we hide from Him.

# THE ASCENSION AND SESSION OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 5

Genesis 3  
07/13/03

*Revelation 12:5 And she [the virgin Mary] gave birth to a son [the humanity of Christ], a male child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron [the harness through which the Lord Jesus Christ will rule in the Millennium]; and her child was caught up to God and to His throne [the ascension and session].*

Satan overthrew the harness by saying, "I will be like the most high God." This same principle is being demonstrated every day of human history, just as it was during the time of the prehistoric angelic conflict. Satan tried it twice, in angelic history and human history. However, *no creature has or ever will successfully challenge the Creator (the Lord Jesus Christ).*

We know the Lord Jesus Christ is the Creator of the universe from passages such as Col 1:16, *"For by Him all things were created, both in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities—all things have been created by Him and for Him."* Even born-again believers are constantly challenging this principle. Many doctrinal believers are driven to a less challenging concept of the Christian way of life, when they reject verses like 1Co 6:19-20, *"Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own? For you have been bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body."*

*Rom 6:12-13, "Therefore do not let the sin nature reign in your mortal body that you should obey its lusts, and do not go on presenting the members of your body to sin as instruments of unrighteousness; but present yourselves to God as those alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God."*

*Rom 12:1 I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship.*

Believers can not afford to forget the lesson of Luk 12:20, *"You fool! This very night your soul is required of you; and now who will own what you have worked for?"* Believers seem to fail to realize that the system God has designed, the predesigned plan of God for the Royal Family, is specifically meant to give us the opportunity of receiving fantastic blessing from life, in historical prosperity or historical adversity.

It is important to note the relationship between the two Adams, the first Adam, in the Garden, and the last Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ.

*1Co 15:22,45 For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive... So also it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living soul. The last Adam became a life-giving spirit."*

We have noted the correlations between the two Adams and how the creation of man to resolve the angelic conflict had to start on the same high note as the original creation of angels. Therefore, human history began with one man and one woman in the garden under perfect provision and perfect environment, but there had to be a test for man's volition right from the start. Man was not created to be locked into positive volition; he had to have free will. The man and woman had daily conversations with the Lord Jesus Christ, which established the principle of their conscience. They were made in the image of God, Gen 1:27, *"And God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them."*

To be made in the image of God has nothing to do with overt appearance. God does not have two ears, two eyes, one nose, and a mouth. "Image" means three things that relate to the soul. In the essence of God are three factors, which we also have in the essence of man's soul.

*Gen 5:1-2 This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day when God created man, He made him in the likeness of God. He created them male and female, and He blessed them and named them Man in the day when they were created.*

What does it mean to be made in the image of God? First of all, it means self-consciousness—"I am." I recognize my existence, and that I must make my own decisions. I recognize that I must have personal control of my own life, and I must, if I have any truth at all, understand my own personal sense of destiny. Secondly, it means moral reasoning power—"I ought." Thirdly, it means self-determination—"I will."

We have volition, or free will; we have the right of self-determination. The man and woman were told, not once, but many times, *"You shall not eat from that one tree,"* and the tree was named, *"the knowledge of good and evil."* They did not know the difference between good and evil. In fact, they did not need to know the difference at that time. Man was the ruler of planet earth, not knowing, of course that Satan had been the previous ruler, and that when God threw Satan off the earth for the courtroom scene, Satan and the fallen angels left so much "trash" behind, that God froze the entire world in an ice pack.

To prepare the earth for man's inhabitation, God removed the ice pack from the earth, cleaned it up for man's habitation, and made man its ruler, which Satan saw as an easy challenge. In his investigation, Satan saw that Adam was not only the ruler of the world, but he was also the authority over Ishshah, the woman. Satan realized that he had to make his attack on Ishshah, and he did. He convinced the woman finally that she had get to the tree and eat while she could, so she could be as smart as God. As for Adam, when the woman held out her hand and extended the fruit, Adam made his choice from the function of his own volition. The choice was between the woman outside the garden, and Jesus Christ in the garden, and he chose the woman. The curse was pronounced on the first Adam and the woman, and the woman was made subordinate to the man.

However, in Gen 3:21, God decided that He would always do something about the curse: *"And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them."* God was demonstrating that He was going to give them and their progeny a great volitional opportunity. The curse of the first Adam was going to be removed by the curse of the last Adam, Gal 3:13, *"Christ redeemed us from the curse of the Law, having become a curse for us—for it is written, 'Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree.'"* The killing of an animal always correctly depicts the work of our Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross.

Gen 3:17-19 directly applies to the first Adam and the Last Adam and the doctrine of the ascension and session: *"Then to Adam He said, 'Because you have listened to the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat from it'; cursed is the ground because of you; in toil you shall eat of it all the days of your life. Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for you; and you shall eat the plants of the field; by the sweat of your face you shall eat bread, till you return to the ground, because from it you were taken; for you are dust, and to dust you shall return.'"* In all of these new developments is the curse.

The woman would always have to face a very special volitional problem—would she accept the authority of man or not? The woman said in Gen 3:13b, *"The serpent deceived me, and I ate."* The woman with a perfect soul was subjected to deception. The woman, every day, along with the man, had heard our Lord Jesus Christ make dissertation after dissertation, and yet she failed. As with Satan, arrogance was her first sin. She sinned first, but she did not know what she was doing, therefore the man, who knew what he was doing, is the basis for passing down the old sin nature. In Gen 3:16 God says to the woman, *"I will greatly multiply your pain in childbirth, in pain you shall bring forth children; yet your desire shall be for your husband, and he shall rule over you."* The phrase, *"he shall rule over you,"* is the basis for human history; the man will always rule over the woman. The woman is a responder, and she will bring forth children.



Why does the Lord say, “Yet your desire shall be for your husband”? The answer is for the simplest of all reasons—the woman, like the man, will have her own harness to struggle with, and this desire is placed there as her harness. The woman will resent it, fight it, and reject it, and she has a choice to accept or reject; the key to everything in the angelic conflict is volition. Without that desire, civilization could not exist. If the woman does not desire the man who is going to rule over her, she has no basis or motivation for accepting the harness. The key to civilization is the woman—when the woman is out of harness, there is no civilization, but only barbarianism, i.e., the human race in a state of self-destruction.

In Gen 3:17 the entire surface of planet earth was changed, and even the ground received a curse. And from now on, physical life would terminate in death; of course, there had been no death in the human race until this time. Everything that is stated in Gen 3, by way of judgment, dealt with physical life in time, unlike the great trial of Satan and the fallen angels, where Satan would say, “We can’t do it, we’re not going to it, it’s unfair.”

God gave the man and the woman the same deal that He gave Satan. Satan said, “How can a loving God cast his creatures, fallen angels, into the lake of fire?” This is the great issue. However, when God condemned man, everything that He mentioned had to do with *temporal life*, not eternal life (the woman’s desire for her husband, child-bearing, the man’s work, the curse on the ground, and physical death). Everything in Satan’s trial had to do with *eternal condemnation* because they had had their chance over and over again. In Gen 3:21, “*The Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them.*” The issue was going to be a new “tree of life,” the Cross. The tree of life is a very serious issue, both in time and in eternity.

- In Gen 2:9, the tree of life was created by God to sustain man’s body, soul, and spirit.
- In Gen 3:22, the tree of life is related to that which is eternal.
- In Gen 3:24, the tree of life had to be guarded by cherubim angels because of its power.
- In Pro 3:18, doctrine is said to be a tree of life to those who take hold of her.
- In Pro 11:30, the fruit of the righteous (those who live for God) is said to be a tree of life.
- In Pro 13:12, desire fulfilled is a tree of life.
- In Pro 15:4, a soothing tongue is a tree of life.
- In Rev 2:7, the winner believer has the privilege of eating of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God.
- In Rev 22:2, eternity has the tree of life.
- In Rev 22:14, the tree of life is related to those who rebounded in time and went forward with their personal sense of destiny.

Throughout the Old Testament, that Cross would be depicted by an altar, and an animal would be put on the altar. The blood of the animal would depict eternal salvation, and the coat of skin would be the righteousness imputed. Human history would exactly parallel the history of the angelic conflict. The angels could now watch the volition of man, and while the first Adam failed, the last Adam did not. The proof of the victory of the last Adam is His resurrection, ascension and session.

The creation of the first Adam then resolves the angelic conflict and answers the appeal of Satan. To resolve the angelic conflict, an inferior creature, Adam, is placed on planet earth, possessing one thing in common with the angels as rational creatures—the image of God, the *bona fide* function of volition.

*Psa 8:3-6 When I consider Thy heavens, the work of Thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which Thou hast ordained; what is man, that Thou dost take thought of him? And the son of man, that Thou dost care for him? Yet Thou hast made him a little lower than God, and dost crown him with glory and majesty! Thou dost make him to rule over the works of Thy hands; Thou hast put all things under his feet.*

Human volition is therefore tested in exactly the same pattern as angelic volition. Angels began in a status-quo of innocence, as did mankind. Angels sinned, Isa 14, Rev 12:4, in the negative volition of Satan and those who followed him. Mankind sinned, in the negative volition of Adam and the woman. God provided a way of salvation for the angels, unknown to us in its nature, and God provided salvation for mankind. As a result, angels are divided into two categories, Rev 12:7, as is mankind, Joh 3:36.

Two tests have been instituted then for man's volition. Under the perfect environment, mankind is prohibited the use of one tree, as a volitional test. Man could only fail through negative volition. There was no sin in the perfect environment of the Garden, until it was brought in by man's volition. The first sin was disobedience to God's prohibition. In the status of innocence, man could only sin in one way, negative volition toward a divine prohibition, and the motivation that led to it. In the case of the woman, it was arrogance. In the case of the man, it was a desire for the woman; now, however, the woman will desire the man.

Then, after the fall of man, in a state of sinfulness, salvation is promised and offered to the human race, Gen 3:15, by the last Adam.

*Gen 3:15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head, and you shall bruise him on the heel."*

This salvation required the Lord Jesus Christ dying on the Cross. The issue now changes as man leaves perfect environment and enters imperfect environment. In the Garden, the issue was a prohibition—"No" to the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. After the fall of man, the issue is positive volition toward the new tree, the Cross—"Yes" to the Tree of Life.

# A PLACE OF REFUGE, INSIDE THE PRE-DESIGNED PLAN OF GOD

Revelation 12:6

07/20/03

Revelation 12:5 deals with Satan's attitude toward the Person of Christ and the reason he seeks to destroy the Jews and those who are born again and saved: "And she [the virgin Mary] gave birth to a son [the humanity of Christ], a male child, who is to rule all the nations with a rod of iron [the harness that the Lord Jesus Christ will use to rule during the Millennium]; and her child was caught up to God and to His throne [the ascension and session]." Rev 12:6 continues, "And the woman fled into the wilderness where she had a place prepared by God, so that there she might be nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days." "The woman" here refers to true Israel, believing Jews who were evangelized in the first half of the Tribulation, and in this verse we see the divine protection for Israel from the great holocaust of the Tribulation period.

In Rev 12:6 we also see that sometimes God gives *antithetical* advice and commands to believers. The Jewish believers of the first half of the Tribulation are given a command to flee to the mountains, whereas the Jewish believers in the second half of the Tribulation are given a different command, and that is to fight. The believer must have a personal relationship with God so that he can hear His voice and follow His call. *Ecclesiastes* chapter 3 brings out this principle; "There is an appointed time for everything. And there is a time for every event under heaven," Ecc 3:1.

*Ecc 3:2 A time to plant, and a time to uproot what is planted.*

*Ecc 3:3 A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to tear down, and a time to build up.*

*Ecc 3:4 A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance.*

*Ecc 3:5 A time to throw stones, and a time to gather stones; a time to embrace, and a time to shun embracing.*

*Ecc 3:6 A time to search, and a time to give up as lost; a time to keep, and a time to throw away.*

*Ecc 3:7 A time to tear apart, and a time to sew together; a time to be silent, and a time to speak.*

*Ecc 3:8 A time to love, and a time to hate; a time for war, and a time for peace.*

Without a relationship with God and the divine viewpoint of life, you will not be able to discern the antithetical commands that God gives.

1. There is a time in your life for you to uproot or destroy that which you have been investing your time in, Ecc 3:2.
2. Do not try to hold on to something that God desires to take away; there is a time to run and there is a time to fight.
3. There is also a time to tear down and break away from pursuits and relationships hindering your spiritual growth. There comes a time when we need to break away from others.
4. There is a time when we must have certain things in our life completely removed.
5. God has allotted a certain amount of time for us to be destructive and constructive, and God gives antithetical advice as to what to do and when to do it.
6. There is a time to just simply admit that things did not work out the way you wanted them to and go on with your life.

God gives antithetical advice and commands to believers, and here if they are going to survive to fulfill the plan of God, they must run. There are times you have to run, other times you have to fight. We have to be flexible in the plan of God; only Bible doctrine itself is inflexible. What you do by way of application to a certain situation, demands that you have a detailed knowledge of God's plan and the

ability to make more than one application in the variety of situations you will face in this life as a believer. Flexibility is extremely important, and lack of flexibility in the Church has certainly given the plan of God and everything else we represent, a “black eye,” as many believers today misrepresent the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Jews in the first half of the Tribulation run, although they most likely wanted to stay and fight, but to do so would have been inflexibility. The application of doctrine to their situation is run, flee, and get going. In the last half of the Tribulation, it is fight, don't run, and stand fast. You have to know when to fight, and you have to know when to run, and if you run when you should fight, you're going to die. If you as a believer live by your emotions, or what is sometimes called your “instincts,” you will not make it in the plan of God.

*Rev 12:6 And the woman fled into the wilderness where she had a place prepared by God, so that there she might be nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days.*

The born-again Jews flee to the “wilderness,” an uninhabited region, referred to in the Middle East as the high desert country. This includes areas such as Moab, Edom, Ammon, and Petra. This wilderness is “where she had a place prepared by God.” The word “where” which is the Greek adjective *hopou*, which denotes only *one place* where the Jews in Palestine can go to be absolutely safe for the rest of the Tribulation period; this is God's geographical location for their life. The woman, true Israel, has a wonderful place of refuge, the wall of fire, Zec 2:5.

*Zec 2:5 “For I, declares the LORD, will be a wall of fire around her, and I will be the glory in her midst.”*

So many believers are afraid of changing their geographical location, but when God calls us to get up and move on, we cannot afford to ignore Him. And we must not only go where He calls us, we must make the commitment to stay there. Even after you enter into the will of God, you still need staying power.

*Rev 12:6 And the woman fled into the high desert country where she had a place...*

The word “place” is the Greek noun *topon*, and it means a specific place, a correct geographical location. This place of refuge is said to be prepared by God because God does not neglect the believer in time of disaster. It is the believer who neglects God in time of disaster and even prosperity—prosperity meaning opportunity, the great opportunities given to us in the plan of God.

The Tribulation period is divided into two parts, each approximately 3½ years. There are two categories of saved Jews—those who are saved in the first half, and those who are saved in the second half of the Tribulation. The remnant in the first half of the Tribulation are evangelized by 144,000 Jewish evangelists, and in obedience to the Word of God they flee to the high desert country of Edom, Moab, and Ammon, Dan 11:41. The second category is the remnant evangelized in the second half of the Tribulation by Moses and Elijah, the two witnesses whom we have studied, and instead of fleeing, they take refuge in Jerusalem, where they fight the king of the North in the final phase of the Armageddon campaign, Zec 14:1-7. We see the fleeing remnant in the first half of the Tribulation and the fighting remnant in the last half of the Tribulation. There are those who run in obedience to the Word of God and those who fight in obedience to the Word of God.

*Rev 12:6 And the woman [believing Israel, those evangelized in the first half of the Tribulation], fled into the wilderness [to the high desert country], where she had a place prepared by God, so that there she might be nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days.*

There are many doctrines that apply to you as a Church-age believer. You are in the Church-age as a member of the Royal Family, and you are not going to die before the time appointed by God, as long as you are of positive volition, and you are functioning inside the predesigned plan of God. You cannot die, and you cannot be destroyed by all the power of Satan, as long as God has a purpose for your life, so death is nothing to fear. You do not have to live in fear of what Satan and the fallen angels

are trying to do to you, 2Ti 1:7, *“For God has not given us a lifestyle of fear, but of power and love and discipline.”*

Even though you face the greatest possible historical disaster, instead of death, there is a place of refuge. That place is not always geographical, but we always have the principle of the wall of fire protecting us, wherever we are, inside the predesigned plan of God. The predesigned plan of God in this dispensation is the place of refuge. Inside this wall of fire that we call the predesigned plan of God for the Church-age, we have:

- The filling of the Spirit through rebound.
- Enforced and genuine humility.
- The “momentum gate”—perception and application of doctrine.
- Motivational virtue directed toward God.
- Functional virtue directed toward man and circumstances.

The believer functioning consistently inside the predesigned plan of God is safe. In the midst of a place of danger, there is a place of refuge, if you are inside the predesigned plan of God. No matter how chaotic and difficult circumstances become historically, the prosperity provided in the predesigned plan of God is extended to believers in disaster as well as in prosperity. Historical prosperity or historical disaster will not affect your blessing.

Because you realize the secret...

*Phi 4:10-11 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at last you have revived your concern for me; indeed, you were concerned before, but you lacked opportunity. Not that I speak from want; for I have learned to be content in whatever circumstances I am.*

Paul is revealing that no matter what the circumstances of life may be, he is not changed by the circumstances, and he is not a slave to circumstances. He has passed the adversity and the pressure test and with the gift from Philippi, he will pass the prosperity test. He was just as happy in poverty as he was in prosperity because he had God’s happiness. The victory for the Christian is to face the situations of life with total stability so that he does not become a slave to his circumstances.

Doctrine makes us self-sufficient and gives us freedom, and in Phi 4:12 we see the basic virtue in the Christian life, as Paul opens this verse with the phrase “I know,” since knowing the truth is what matters most.

*Phi 4:12 I know how to get along with humble means, and I also know how to live in prosperity; in any and every circumstance I have learned the secret of being filled and going hungry, both of having abundance and suffering need.”*

He can now even handle adverse situations that continue for an ongoing period of time. He now knows how to handle living in prosperity and having over and above what is necessary. The key to living in humility and prosperity is to realize that though circumstances vary, grace remains the same under all circumstances. If we are rightly related to the grace of God, we can have the same contentment in all geographical locations and circumstances. While most people are slaves to their circumstances, the happiness of the Christian does not depend on circumstances. The word for “secret” is the Greek noun *mueo*, and it means to have been instructed or initiated into the “mystery.” *Mueo* comes from *musterion* where we get the word “mystery.” It means to be initiated into an exclusive club where there are very few who “know the score,” or who are aware of the benefits and privileges.

Paul is saying that in all places and in all circumstances, he has been taught the secret, the secret of being “well fed” and “going hungry.” Remember that happiness does not depend on prosperity, neither does misery depend on adversity. This verse is the description of the normal Christian life. Being a Christian does not mean you will always be smiling and everything is always going to be “nice.” No matter how far you advance in the Christian life, you will never be free from changing circumstances; they will change for better or worse, but that does not mean you have to

change. When you have God's happiness, you will not change with your circumstances. Occupation with Christ through Bible doctrine allows us to handle any problem we face.

*Phi 4:13 I can do all things through Him who strengthens me.*

Here it is—Bible doctrine giving strength to the supergrace believer. This verse literally says, "*I have endowed power for all things by means of the One who keeps on pouring the power into me.*" Jesus Christ keeps on pouring the power into you as you perceive, metabolize, and apply Bible doctrine. When adversity hits, it's not time to quit, it's time to pour it on. You have not yet arrived, so drive harder, and hit harder. Keep going and you'll keep growing. This is the package that can grant you victory over every circumstance in life.

# THE DOCTRINE OF SEPARATION

Matthew 24:15-18

07/27/03

Matthew 24:9-15 describes the “last days”: *“Then they will deliver you to tribulation, and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations on account of My name. And at that time many will fall away and will deliver up one another and hate one another. And many false prophets will arise, and will mislead many. And because lawlessness is increased, most people’s love will grow cold. But the one who endures to the end, he shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a witness to all the nations, and then the end shall come. Therefore when you see the abomination of desolation which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains.”* The “abomination of desolation” is the image of the dictator of the revived Roman Empire in the Tribulation, the leader of world ecumenical religion. His statue is set up in all kinds of churches, in synagogues everywhere, and in the temple in Jerusalem, where this satanic system of religion is accepted. This image will be broadcasted throughout the world.

Many Jews living in Jerusalem at this time have responded to the message of the 144,000 Jewish evangelists, Rev 7:4. They have believed on the Lord Jesus Christ by the thousands. They have been learning doctrine for several years, and they now have a very important message, the message of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, Mat 24:14, *“And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a witness to all the nations, and then the end shall come.”*

Throughout the Old Testament, prophets received special insight into the future. The most profound vision of what was to come was given 2,000 years ago on a hillside outside Jerusalem. Here a small group of disciples had gathered around the Lord Jesus Christ, and the question they asked Him prompted a response that spans the centuries from then till now. We read in Mat 24:3, *“And as He was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, ‘Tell us, when will these things be, and what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?’”* Our Lord answered them with specific indicators to watch for. The term “the end of the age,” as used here, does not refer to the end of the world, but the end of the current reign of man on earth.

1. The universal means of communication, Mat 24:14. Our Lord said the preaching of His Gospel to all nations would be a specific sign that would indicate when the actual End would come upon the world. Never in the course of history has the Gospel been preached in all the world to all nations as it is currently—if not directly by missionaries, by the modern media of telecommunications. By some accounts, the Gospel message has now been preached to over 4 billion people, in virtually every country.
2. The explosion of cults and the occult, Mat 24:4-5, *“And Jesus answered and said to them, ‘See to it that no one misleads you. For many will come in My name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will mislead many.”* Counterfeit spirituality is everywhere as in 1Ti 4:1—false Christs, psychic phenomena, spiritism, Satan worship, witchcraft, nature worship, and the “New Age” movement.
3. The increase of wars, Mat 24:6-8. No period in all human history has witnessed the escalation of wars as has the 20<sup>th</sup> century. The International Red Cross estimates that over 100 million people have been killed in wars in the last century alone. Since World War II, there have been over 150 major wars, as well as hundreds of armed rebellions and revolutions. The death toll in armed conflicts since the end of World War II is more than 24 million.
4. The increase of famines and diseases, Mat 24:7, *“For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes.”* Over 50

million people throughout the world are living with HIV-AIDS, and famines affect one of six people on earth today.

5. The increase of earthquakes, Mat 24:7. A recent study shows a dramatic increase in worldwide earthquakes, just since the decade of Israel's rebirth. The *Universal Almanac* tells us that there were only 21 earthquakes of major strength between the years 1000 and 1800. But between 1800 and 1900 there were 18 major earthquakes. Between 1900 and 1950, there were 33 major quakes—almost as many as in the preceding 1,850 years! Between 1950 and 1991 there were 93 major earthquakes, almost triple the number of the previous half century—which claimed the lives of 1.3 million people around the world. Numerous scientists warn that we are currently entering a period of great earthquake disturbances.
6. Israel's rebirth, Mat 24:32-33. As Jesus prophesied, the Jews were scattered during the Jewish-Roman war of A.D. 70, Luk 21:24. Also as prophesied, the nation of Israel ("God's time clock") was miraculously reborn on May 14, 1948.
7. Plummeting morality, 2Ti 3:1-5, *"But realize this, that in the last days difficult times will come. For men will be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, arrogant, revilers, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, unholy, unloving, irreconcilable, malicious gossips, without self-control, brutal, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; holding to a form of godliness, although they have denied its power; and avoid such men as these."* Studies show a shocking breakdown, just since the middle of the last century.
8. The explosion of travel and education, Dan 12:4. Two key conditions described about 2,500 years ago for the Second Coming are that *"travel and education shall be vastly increased."* In all of history, the vast increase in travel has come just since mid-century with the explosion of both ground and air transportation and in the field of education, with the advance of science and computers. This phrase, "many will go back and forth" literally means "speeding about, here and there." When you consider that people's means of transportation had not changed substantially for thousands of years, the significance of this prophecy is apparent. Today we not only drive at enormous speeds and cover great distances in automobiles, but a jet can fly around the world in 24 hours, and a spacecraft circles the planet in 80 minutes! Knowledge has increased in recent years almost beyond imagination. The equivalent of over 300 million pages of text is now sent over the Internet every day. Eighty percent of all the scientists who have ever lived are alive today, and every minute they add 2,000 pages to man's scientific knowledge.
9. The New World Order, Mat 24:15, Dan 7-12. Increased centralization of world financial and political power is a prelude to the soon-coming world power system in the hands of "Antichrist," who will be the incarnation of Satan and who will deceive most of the world.
10. The increase in apostasy, 2Th 2:3-5. The Bible predicts that in the last days there will be "a form of godliness, although they have denied its power." Today many churches deny the eternal truths of Scripture and power of the Holy Spirit, replacing them with ungodly, temporal, and "politically correct" values.
11. A world "filled with violence," Gen 6:5,11; Mat 24:37. Another condition that the Lord Jesus Christ said would be prevalent just prior to His return would be unrestrained violence. In Mat 24:37-39, our Lord said, *"For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah."* In Noah's days, "the earth was corrupt before God, and filled with violence." Today's headlines are full of tragic stories of senseless violence. In the past 30 years alone, suicide and murder have claimed the lives of over 1.2 million Americans, more than all the men killed in all the wars in the history of the U.S.
12. The coming of the Antichrist, 1Jo 2:15-18. An important and final sign of the end, to which the Bible devotes numerous chapters, is the rise of a one-world government led by a tyrant known



as the Antichrist or “the Beast.” The Book of *Revelation* says that the whole world will worship Satan in the person of this bestial world leader. The Bible tells of an ingenious seven-year peace agreement or “covenant” which will be pivotal to the Antichrist’s claim to world leadership. This pact will temporarily resolve the Middle East crisis by working out a compromise between Israel and her Arab neighbors. Jerusalem’s Mount Moriah, where the Jew’s ancient temple once stood and where the Muslim Dome of the Rock stands today, will be a focal point. Three and a half years after the enactment of the Antichrist’s covenant, he will revoke it and make Jerusalem his international capital, and outlaw all religions except the worship of himself and his mystical image. This image will somehow be empowered to both speak and cause those who refuse to worship it to be killed, Rev 13:14-15.

13. The mark of the Beast, Rev 13:16-17. Two thousand years ago a simple fisherman, the Apostle John, predicted a global economic system in which everyone would be forced to take a number, without which they will not be able to buy or sell. It is only since the advent of computers and electronic banking that this could happen.
14. Our Lord’s Second Coming, Mat 24:31, “*And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory.*” The world’s darkest hour will abruptly end with the dawning of the brightest day when Jesus Christ returns. The judgment of God will fall upon the Antichrist and his followers, culminating with Jesus Christ’s return to earth to destroy the one-world empire at the battle of *Armageddon*. Then will begin the Millennium, 1,000 years of peace and plenty and paradise for all (Rev 19:11-21, 20:1-4). For anyone who is not prepared for these earth-shaking events, they must get prepared by simply believing on the Lord Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. Remember that He loves you, and will be with you and guide you through whatever perilous times you may face.

In Rev 12:6, “The woman [true Israel, believing Jews], fled into the high desert country where she had a place prepared by God.” We are given a further description in Mat 24:15-18, “Therefore when you see the abomination of desolation which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; let him who is on the housetop not go down to get the things out that are in his house; and let him who is in the field not turn back to get his cloak.” The lesson here is that even though you are enjoying yourself upstairs on the roof, do not go downstairs and pack up—just go. Even though you may be enjoying a time of prosperity, do not go back down to the cosmic system and try to salvage what you accomplished there. There comes a time that you have to “get up and get out.” This is a spiritual principle that also works in the natural realm, Deu 22:9 “You shall not sow your vineyard with two kinds of seed, lest all the produce of the seed which you have sown, and the increase of the vineyard become defiled.”

Believers have to learn that there is a *time to separate*. The last thing you need, with the struggles you are already facing in the spiritual life, is to be around the *wrong kind of people*. A lot of believers have enough problems with their own weaknesses, and can not afford to stay around others who are negative. There comes a time when God’s people need to learn the importance of separation. Separation is the application of doctrine to relationships in life. It is the technique of switching from *personal love* to *impersonal love* when dealing with loved ones in the cosmic system who distract you from God’s calling. Separation is based on the perception of Bible doctrine by which one establishes priorities in life and the application of doctrine to relationships with people.

1. “*Separation unto*” is the principle of *perpetuation of momentum* in the predesigned plan of God. You are to separate yourself unto God’s plan, and not let anyone or anything take you away from that plan. It is momentum that comes from metabolized doctrine and personal love for God as the basis for establishing priorities in life.

2. "Separation from" is applied to *believers and unbelievers in the cosmic system*, especially those who influence you to leave God's plan.

Separation has two connotations (mental and physical).

1. Mental separation. If you do not keep yourself mentally separated from those involved in the cosmic system, you will eventually develop mental attitude sins toward them and others. No one is worth losing your fellowship with God. They may be antagonistic toward you but do not become antagonistic in return. Remember what our Lord said in Mat 10:34-38, "*Do not think that I came to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; and a man's enemies will be the members of his household. He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me.*"
2. Physical separation. There are some cases where switching from personal love to impersonal love will not be enough. For example, when you are getting false doctrine in a church, you must physically leave under the principle of impersonal love. And when a wife is beaten by her husband, she should leave. However, the most basic reason for physical separation is to avoid the compromise of doctrine. It means to avoid any personal contact with an individual under any circumstances. This means severance of all relations of any kind with that person. Physical separation is sometimes needed to maintain one's priorities and remain in the predesigned plan of God.

Pro 13:20 advises us that "He who walks with wise men will be wise, but the companion of fools will suffer harm." 2Th 3:14 gives similar advice: "If anyone does not obey our doctrinal teaching in this epistle, take special note of that person and do not associate with him, so that he may be put to shame." Separation from unbelievers in the cosmic system is taught in 2Co 6:14-17, and the importance of separation in social life is taught in Jer 15:16-17, 1Pe 4:3-4. By switching from personal love to impersonal love you discard your illusions about people you love. A close relationship with something or someone in the cosmic system is a partnership with the cosmic system. There comes a time, as the believer grows spiritually, that his first decision must be to separate from the crowd that leads him in the wrong direction.

Our Lord is giving a vital warning in Mat 24:15, "Therefore when you see the abomination of desolation which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; let him who is on the housetop not go down to get the things out that are in his house; and let him who is in the field not turn back to get his cloak." Do not go home to get anything. As soon as you hear the message, get going, get out, and don't rationalize or evaluate or procrastinate, just get moving. Move with promptness, for this is the signal to leave, and those who remain will die. However, the believers who go forward in obedience to the Word of God, making the right application, are going to make it. However, those who reject the message are going to die in the second half of the Tribulation.

Many will be saved through the two witnesses, Moses and Elijah, the two heralds, and they will live if they obey. However, in their case, the instructions are to fight or die. Here we see the importance of flexibility, of knowing one's place in history, and of understanding God's plan for your life and your personal sense of destiny.

# SERAPHIM AND CHERUBIM ANGELS

Hebrews 1:14

08/03/03

*Revelation 12:6 "And the woman [true Israel, the believing Jews] fled into the high desert country in order that there [in a specific location, the desert country of Edom, Moab, and Ammon] she might be nourished [sustained] for one thousand two hundred and sixty days."*

We have noted that during the Tribulation period, guardian angels will be used by God to nourish and sustain believers from any of the satanic attacks made upon them. Heb 1:14 says concerning angels, "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent out to render service for the sake of those who will inherit salvation?" The Bible reveals the presence of angels and their role as guardians. They will function in that role for the Jews especially during the Tribulation period.

*Mat 18:10 "See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you, that their angels in heaven continually behold the face of My Father who is in heaven."*

Angels play an important role in the protection of God's people, especially in light of the invisible enemy we face, namely Satan and the fallen angels, Eph 6:12.

*Eph 6:12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places.*

In Luk 16:22, angels are used to protect God's people when they face situations of death: "Now it came about that the poor man died and he was carried away by the angels to Abraham's bosom; and the rich man also died and was buried." Many of us have been delivered and saved from situations of death without even knowing it. In Mat 1:20, guardian angels are used by God for the purpose of comfort through divine intervention: "An angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, 'Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary as your wife; for that which has been conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit.'"

Our Lord said in Joh 14:27, "Peace I leave with you; My peace I give to you; not as the world gives, do I give to you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor let it be fearful." He could say this because of the presence of the invisible elect angels. We have a protection and a comfort described in 1Co 2:9, "Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and which have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared for those who love Him." This is another reason why the Apostle Paul could say in Phi 4:7, "And the peace of God, which surpasses all comprehension, shall guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus."

In Mat 2:13, an angel was used to warn God's people of coming tragedy or disaster: "Now when they had departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, 'Arise and take the Child and His mother, and flee to Egypt, and remain there until I tell you; for Herod is going to search for the Child to destroy Him.'" Guardian angels have saved people from situations of physical death; we may call it "coincidences," but God calls it divine intervention. In Mat 2:19-21, a guardian angel was used to guide and direct God's people: "But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, 'Arise and take the Child and His mother, and go into the land of Israel; for those who sought the Child's life are dead.' And he arose and took the Child and His mother, and came into the land of Israel." Many of you have been guided and directed by angels through providential circumstances and so-called "coincidences."

There are three categories of guardian angels given from God to the human race.

1. A guardian angel over the client nation, Dan 10:13.
2. A guardian angel for every child, believer or unbeliever, Mat 18:10.

3. A guardian angel for every believer, Heb 1:14. This angel is sent to minister to you because you are an heir of salvation.

Remember what Satan was in eternity past. He was a created being in Psa 148:5, "Let the angels praise the name of the Lord, for He commanded and they were created." He was a cherub angel, Eze 28:14, "You were the anointed cherub who covers, and I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; you walked in the midst of the stones of fire." We have noted that as a result of the prehistoric angelic conflict, that certain elect angels received blessings and rewards, and that the majority did not. Angels are shown with wings in many pictures, but in reality, the majority of them do not have wings at all. Wings represent rank in the angelic realm. Just as in the human race, there are also degrees of rank and privilege in the angelic realm.

The highest-ranking angels are called *seraphim* and have 6 wings, Isa 6:2. The Hebrew term "seraphim" means "burning ones"; their title speaks of their consuming devotion to God. Seraphim were also noted for their priestly service to God, Isa 6:1-7.

*Isa 6:1-7 In the year of King Uzziah's death, I saw the Lord sitting on a throne, lofty and exalted, with the train of His robe filling the temple. Seraphim stood above Him, each having six wings; with two he covered his face, and with two he covered his feet, and with two he flew. And one called out to another and said, "Holy, Holy, Holy, is the Lord of hosts, the whole earth is full of His glory." And the foundations of the thresholds trembled at the voice of him who called out, while the temple was filling with smoke. Then I said, "Woe is me, for I am ruined! Because I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips; for my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts." Then one of the seraphim flew to me, with a burning coal in his hand which he had taken from the altar with tongs. And he touched my mouth with it and said, "Behold, this has touched your lips; and your iniquity is taken away, and your sin is forgiven."*

The seraphim are apparently angels who became winners by understanding and honoring the righteousness and justice of God. This should be comforting to us as believers because these powerful angels are used by the Lord to control and protect human history. Seraph angels are known for having great authority and strength, Rev 5:2, 10:1, 14:18.

*Rev 10:1 And I saw another strong angel coming down out of heaven, clothed with a cloud; and the rainbow was upon his head, and his face was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire.*

Seraphim are the highest-ranking angels in the Word of God, and these powerful creatures are in authority over our guardian angels, helping to guard us from all the evil in the invisible realm. The cherub-ranked angels (cherubim) have two or four wings. We know that the cherub was the highest-ranking angel in eternity past, because Satan, whose name was called the "son of the morning," was a four-winged cherub, and he was the highest of all angels. Satan was a beautiful, wise angel, and took millions of angels with him in rebellion against God. Now the seraph angel has become higher, because the seraphim have glorified God against Satan. The angels with wings can undertake great endeavors and can carry heavy loads. They are actually the ones who hold leadership positions over the wingless angels in the angelic realm; they even lead and direct the guardian angels assigned to us. The cherubim are the ones who guarded the gates of Eden in Gen 3:24. In Eze 1:4-12, and Eze 10:9-10, the cherubim also are used as the vehicle of divine judgment in the Old Testament.

*Eze 1:6-12 Each of them had four faces and four wings. And their legs were straight and their feet were like a calf's hoof, and they gleamed like burnished bronze. Under their wings on their four sides were human hands. As for the faces and wings of the four of them, their wings touched one another; their faces did not turn when they moved, each went straight forward. As for the form of their faces, each had the face of a man, all four had the face of a lion on the right and the face of a bull on the left, and all four had the*

*face of an eagle. Such were their faces. Their wings were spread out above; each had two touching another being, and two covering their bodies. And each went straight forward; wherever the spirit was about to go, they would go, without turning as they went.*

The four Gospels of the New Testament, *Matthew*, *Mark*, *Luke* and *John* correspond to the visionary depictions of the cherub angels—the four faces of a man, a lion, an ox (or bull), and an eagle.

- ·In the Gospel of *Matthew*, the Lord Jesus Christ is identified as the Lion of the Tribe of Judah.
- ·In the Gospel of *Mark*, the emphasis is placed on the Lord Jesus Christ laboring to fulfill the plan of God, and therefore the ox is in view.
- ·In the Gospel of *Luke*, the emphasis is on the humanity of Christ.
- ·In the Gospel of *John*, the emphasis is on the deity of Christ, identified by the eagle.

In the book of *Revelation*, the man, lion, ox and eagle appear together, Rev 4:7.

*Rev 4:7 "And before the throne there was, as it were, a sea of glass like crystal; and in the center and around the throne, four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind. And the first creature was like a lion, and the second creature like a calf, and the third creature had a face like that of a man, and the fourth creature was like a flying eagle."*

Each one of these creatures is related to one of the Gospels.

In Rev 7:1-2, we see a cherub who commands four wingless angels who control the weather system of the earth.

*Rev 7:1-2 After this I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds of the earth, so that no wind should blow on the earth or on the sea or on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the seal of the living God; and he cried out with a loud voice to the four angels to whom it was granted to harm the earth and the sea...*

In Rev 14:6, there is another cherub who is in charge of what we call crisis evangelism. There will come an unprecedented crisis on this earth in the Tribulation.

*Rev 14:6-7 And I saw another angel flying in midheaven, having an eternal gospel to preach to those who live on the earth, and to every nation and tribe and tongue and people; and he said with a loud voice, "Fear God, and give Him glory, because the hour of His judgment has come; and worship Him who made the heaven and the earth and sea and springs of waters."*

A major crisis will hit the earth during the Tribulational period when the Church is gone. At that time God will have cherub angels teaching the Gospel in the midst of these terrible circumstances—this is called crisis evangelism. Now that the Church has been raptured, this angel will be preaching to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people.

God also uses another cherub to announce the fall of religion in the Tribulational period, Rev 14:8, "And another angel, a second one, followed, saying, 'Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, she who has made all the nations drink of the wine of the passion of her immorality.'" When the Rapture takes place, the church is gone, but religion stays. In Rev 14:9 we see a cherub who warns the human race about the consequences of accepting the ecumenical religious system.

When the church is gone, Satan promotes religion. Satan promotes religions such as the Jehovah's witnesses, the Muslims, the Buddhists, and the Catholics; he promotes any form of religion that is un-Christian and unbiblical. After the church is gone, he still has a religious system, and the cherub angel warns the human race about this deception, Rev 14:9-10, "And another angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, 'If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead or upon his hand, he also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.'" During the Tribulation period Satan will force people to worship him. In the second half of the Tribulation, God also uses another cherub angel to

administer judgment to those on earth, Rev 14:17, “And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, and he also had a sharp sickle.” The cherub seems to have indescribable powers and beauty, and throughout the Word of God, the visible appearances of the cherubim differ—some with four wings and some with two, depending on their glorification of God.

*Rev 12:6 “And the woman fled into the high desert country in order that there she might be nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days.”*

The time is listed by days under the principle that every believer must live one day at a time, as unto the Lord. The exact time is 1,260 days, which is 42 months, or 3½ years on the Jewish calendar. This is the time of Satan’s desperation, which begins with the “abomination of desolation” (Mat 24:15) in Jerusalem, and ends at the Second Advent. During the second half of the Tribulation, Satan will launch the greatest attack in history against the Jews. The objective will be to wipe out all Jews prior to the Second Advent of Christ, so that when Christ returns there will be no Jews to regather, and therefore no Jews to receive the unconditional promises of the Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenants to Israel. In the first half of the Tribulation, regenerate Jews must understand the eschatology of the abomination of desolation. Once they have arrived in the place of refuge, they must remain there, and they cannot afford to be deceived. These Jews are to stand fast for 1,260 days; they are to do nothing except remain where they are. Their God has provided for them a wall of fire, and there they are protected, but nowhere else. They must live one day at a time until the Lord returns.

# AND THERE WAS A BATTLE IN HEAVEN; MICHAEL AND HIS ARMY OF ELECT ANGELS FOUGHT AGAINST THE DRAGON

Revelation 12:7-9

08/10/03

In Rev 12:7-9 we see the reason why Satan promotes the worst Jewish Holocaust in history during the Tribulation period. Satan is expelled from heaven, and he is now extremely frustrated: *“And there was a battle in heaven; Michael and his army of elect angels fought against the dragon. And the dragon and his angels fought, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.”*

This is the last battle to be fought in heaven. Since Michael and his angels are mentioned first in the Greek, we can conclude that they initiated the attack. Until the middle of the Tribulation, Michael will be restrained from both verbal and military attack against Satan, as in Jud 1:9, *“But Michael the archangel, when he disputed with the devil and argued about the body of Moses, did not dare pronounce against him a railing judgment, but said, ‘The Lord rebuke you.’”* Michael has been waiting throughout the course of human history for a crack at Satan, and he has never even been allowed to slander Satan. If anyone could be slandered, it certainly is Satan, but the principle here is that *even people who deserve slandering are not to be slandered*. We are to leave the situation in the Lords hands, and that is how we avoid arrogance. When you slander someone else you are blaspheming God; you are saying that God is not in control, and you have to take over. Michael is a great army commander who *controls his tongue*, therefore controlling himself.

1. Slander is the utterance of false charges or misrepresentations that defame and damage another’s reputation.
2. Gossip is repeating idle talk and rumors about others.
3. Meddling is to concern oneself with, or take part in, other people’s affairs without being asked or needed, and therefore becoming a busybody with one’s tongue.
4. Vilification means to use abusive or slanderous speech to defame or degrade someone else.
5. Judging is to criticize or censure someone’s life without having the authority and the facts to do so.
6. Lying is a false statement intended to willfully deceive the hearers.
7. Verbal deception is using words to purposely mislead others.
8. Hearsay is repeating anything based on what someone else told you, and not on your personal knowledge of the situation.
9. Defamation is the uttering of slanderous or malicious words to try to destroy someone’s reputation.
10. Maligning is harboring bitterness, hatred, and spitefulness against someone, and expressing it by speaking evil.
11. Complaining means to utter expressions of annoyance or resentment, or to find fault with something or someone.
12. Fabrication means to invent and form stories and lies.
13. Equivocation is the use of words or expressions that are susceptible to a double signification, with a view to mislead.
14. Whining is complaining in a childish, undignified way.
15. Whimpering is complaining with a low, whining, broken voice.
16. Murmuring is to utter complaints in a low, half-articulate voice.

Mental attitude sins lead to motivational sins, which lead to the sins of the tongue, which can utterly destroy your life, Jam 3:1-10. James writes in Jam 3:2,8-10, *“For we all stumble in many ways. If anyone does not stumble in what he says, he is a perfect [mature] man, able to bridle the whole body as well... But no one can tame the tongue; it is a restless evil and full of deadly poison. With it we bless our Lord and Father; and with it we curse men, who have been made in the likeness of God; from the same mouth come both blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not to be this way.”*

In Rev 12:7-8, we see the uniqueness of Michael, the great archangel who controls his tongue, and the privileges he enjoys. Michael is one of the highest-ranking elect angels (Dan 10:13) and is called the prince of Israel, and as such he protects Israel as a future client nation to God, Dan 10:21, 12:1. He is known for his respect for authority, as in Jud 1:9. The battle is joined in Rev 12:7, and the outcome, the victory of the elect angels, is seen in verse 8. Satan and his army are driven out of heaven, and confined to the earth, resulting in the greatest wave of anti-Semitism the world will ever know.

When Michael is finally permitted to launch his attack against Satan and the fallen angels with his angelic order of battle, he succeeds completely because he is *prepared* for that day. God uses those who are prepared. Preparation comes through the *perception* of Bible doctrine and its *application*. You can never be prepared as a believer living in the cosmic system. Preparation can only be attained within the predesigned plan of God for your life. In Luk 14:25-32, our Lord taught the importance of preparation. He says in verses 28-32, *“For which one of you, when he wants to build a tower, does not first sit down and calculate the cost, to see if he has enough to complete it? Otherwise, when he has laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all who observe it begin to ridicule him, saying, This man began to build and was not able to finish.’ Or what king, when he sets out to meet another king in battle, will not first sit down and take counsel whether he is strong enough with ten thousand men to encounter the one coming against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is still far away, he sends a delegation and asks terms of peace.”* To secure peace you must prepare for war; this is the principle of freedom through military victory. Failing to prepare is preparing to fail.

A question many believers ask is this: “What if I am prepared but I haven’t been promoted yet?” It is better to be prepared for an opportunity and not have one, than to have an opportunity and not be prepared. True love always involves *responsibility* and *sacrifice*. We do not really love Christ unless we are prepared to face His assignment for us and to take up our cross. You can only be prepared by living consistently inside the predesigned plan of God, utilizing every divine provision. Our usefulness to God does not depend upon our zeal; zeal is no substitute for being prepared, Rom 10:2, *“For I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God, but not in accordance with knowledge.”* The future belongs to those who prepare for it today.

Michael the archangel was successful because he was prepared over a long period of time. He was prepared from the standpoint of doctrine, his thinking, his motivation, and, above all, *virtue*. No one goes anywhere in the Christian life to serve God without motivational virtue directed toward God, including personal love for God and confidence in God. As a motivational virtue, confidence in God means *courage* toward man and circumstances.

Michael’s finest hour will represent every category necessary for preparation:

- His magnificent self-restraint.
- His total rejection of any form of arrogance.
- His ability to be patient.
- His ability to maintain a high level of motivation, and a high level of performance in his great angelic army.

This is to be a reminder to all of us that there is no substitute for being prepared, and being prepared has nothing to do with zeal. You have to be able to think doctrine if you are going to be prepared.



In Rev 12:7-8, all fallen angels are now confined to earth. No longer can they reside in heaven. Their next trip will be to the lake of fire, Hades, or the Abyss. The result of Michael's victory and the beginning of the devil's desperation is recorded in verse 9: *"And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him."* This describes one of the shortest battles in history, and one of the most effective—Satan never has a chance. The only reason Satan can still flex his muscles today is simply because God permits it as part of the angelic conflict. As a result of the victory of the battle in heaven, Satan and all fallen angels are thrown out, and heaven is cleansed of all fallen angels. This can be classified then as the *second fall* of Satan.

Satan has three falls. His first fall took place in eternity past, perhaps billions of years before man existed, in Eze 28:15, *"You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created, until unrighteousness was found in you."* In the middle of the Tribulation, Satan has his second fall, when he is cast out of heaven, Rev 12:9; Satan has access to heaven right now; he spends his time between heaven and earth. At the end of the Millennium will come his third fall, Rev 20:10, *"And the devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever."*

Satan's second fall in Rev 12:9 is described prophetically in Isa 14:12, "How you have fallen from heaven, O star of the morning, son of the dawn! You have been cut down to the earth, you who have weakened the nations!" In Luk 10:18, the Lord Jesus Christ, who was a Prophet, a Priest, and a King, said as a Prophet, "I was watching Satan fall from heaven like lightning." The name "Lucifer" actually comes from the Latin language, and it means "light bearer." The word "Satan" in the Greek is Satanas, which means to gossip, malign, slander, and accuse. Two creatures are said to radiate light, making them extremely attractive—the Hebrew word used in Isa 14:12 is *heyel* for Satan, and the other is *nachash*, the Hebrew word for "serpent" in Gen 3. Satan is a "shining one," the serpent was a "shining one," and both were attractive. Satan was attractive to at least one third of all the angels. The serpent was attractive to one half of the human race at the time—the woman. Satan appears as an angel of light, and he disguises his ministers as angels of light, 2Co 11:14-15, "And no wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness." Satan has ministers and evangelists among the members of the human race. They teach about Jesus, but it is another Jesus. They teach about the spirit, but not the Holy Spirit from God. They talk about the gospel, but not the Gospel of the Bible. If you study the content of the message, rather than the attractiveness of the speaker, you will not be deceived. If you have criteria and standards in your heart based on the Word of God, you will never be fooled by the sweet personality.

Satan has the greatest mind that any creature has ever had; the only mind more intelligent than his is made available to us, and that is "the mind of Christ," 1Co 2:16, Phi 2:5. God offers us the mind of Christ, which is much greater than the greatest mind of all creatures, Satan's, and the average believer says "No, thank you!" Is it any wonder why Rev 12:9 says he deceives the whole world?!

- In Rev 13:14, he deceives the world with the signs he performs.
- In Rev 18:23, he deceives the world by using a very popular church in Rome.
- In Rev 19:20, he deceives those who receive the mark of the beast.

Just before the Millennial reign begins, a seraph angel will throw Satan into the Abyss, Rev 20:3, "...And threw him into the abyss, and shut it and sealed it over him, so that he should not deceive the nations any longer, until the thousand years were completed; after these things he must be released for a short time." In Isa 14:12, Satan is addressed as, "You who have weakened the nations!" The word "nations" here refers to the divine institution of nationalism. God's order for the preservation of the human race is nationalism, the belief that nations will benefit from acting independently rather than collectively, emphasizing national rather than international goals. The first great attack on

nationalism came with the tower of Babel, the first “United Nations” organization, and God Himself destroyed it, dividing the nations three ways, (1) racially, (2) geographically, and (3) linguistically. Why is a creature like “Heylel” cast out of heaven? Because of his five “*I will’s*,” the original sin among creatures, perhaps billions of years before man sinned.

*Isa 14:13a* “But you said in your heart [*Satan thought this in his frontal lobe*], ‘I will ascend to heaven [*the third heaven where God has His abode, 2Co 12:2. Satan wanted the highest heavenly position.*];

*Isa 14:13b* ‘I will raise my throne above the stars [*the “shining ones of God,” the angels, Job 38:7, Jud 1:13, Rev 12:3-4*],

*Isa 14:13c* ‘And I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the North [*rulership over the government of the earth, Isa 2:1-4. This is Messianic recognition.*].

*Isa 14:14a* ‘I will ascend above the heights of the clouds [*Clouds are used to represent the divine presence of God and His glory. Jehovah appeared in the cloud in Exo 16:10, and He rides upon a cloud, Psa 104:3. Satan wants the glory that belongs to God alone.*];

*Isa 14:14b* ‘I will make myself like the Most High [*In spite of the universal impressions that Satan is unlike God, he is much like God outwardly!*].”

Satan still has access into heaven, which is why we read in Job 1:6-7, “Now there was a day when the sons of God [angels] came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. And the Lord said to Satan, ‘From where do you come?’ Then Satan answered the Lord and said, ‘From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it.’” Satan wanted the glory that belonged to God alone. He started a conspiracy against God. He convinced many in God’s congregation that God was very unfair and unjust. And he did this for one reason, self-promotion! Satan wants the glory but he does not have the ability, and that same spirit is manifested everywhere in the human race.

Only God has the ability to operate in divine principles. God’s principle in dealing with the human race is *grace*—man can neither earn nor deserve His blessing. Man cannot of his own ability do anything that glorifies God. There will never be any believer who deserves anything from God—it is all grace! This is why Satan promotes legalism and the works program for salvation and spirituality. He establishes principles that promote *creatures* getting credit. If he can accomplish this, then, as the greatest creature in the universe, he will be able to promote himself. Satan, with his own talent and own ability, all of which was God-given, is trying to supersede God in function and in person.

Satan’s ambition is to be like God. He desires to have the attributes and essence of God, but the very nature of his sin frustrated any possibility of him reproducing any part of the character of God. What frustrates Satan terribly is that any believer with a little doctrine can do what Satan always wanted to do and never could—*imitate God*. The believer who is filled with the Spirit can imitate God, Eph 5:1, “*Therefore be imitators of God, as beloved children*”; and Gal 4:19, “*My children, with whom I am again in labor until Christ is formed in you...*” In Gal 5:16, humans can “walk by means of the Holy Spirit”; Satan cannot. In Eph 5:18, humans can “*be filled with the Spirit,*” but Satan cannot. It is obvious why Satan works so hard to obscure the doctrines of spirituality.

# SATAN'S COSMIC SYSTEM

1 Timothy 4:1-2

08/17/03

*Revelation 12:7-9 And there was a battle in heaven, Michael and his army of elect angels fought against the dragon. And the dragon and his angels fought, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven. [They once had a place in heaven, but were evicted by Michael and the angelic order of battle.] And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.*

Satan and all the fallen angels are thrown out of heaven and confined to planet earth. Satan's next trip is to the Abyss, a compartment of Hades, Rev 20:1-3, and his angels will take their final trip from earth to the lake of fire in Rev 20:10.

The one divine attribute that Satan desires to possess most of all is divine power, the omnipotence of God. No one ever wanted power more than Satan. He does have the power to manipulate, as he demonstrated with the woman in the garden. Satan knew that the woman could handle the man, so all he had to do was to handle the woman. When creatures want power, they are arrogant, and arrogance is very easy to fall into; power is much more difficult to attain. The only thing that satisfies arrogance is power. Arrogance and power lust are a good way to ruin your life in a hurry.

Satan always lusted for the power of God, something that he will never have. God is omnipotent, meaning all-powerful and limitless in ability. He is called "God Almighty" in Gen 17:1, "Now when Abram was ninety-nine years old, the Lord appeared to Abram and said to him, 'I am God Almighty; walk before Me, and be blameless.'" Nothing is impossible for Him, Gen 18:14, "Is anything too difficult for the Lord?" He is the King of Glory, He created and sustains the universe, and He does as He pleases, Psa 24:8, Isa 40:26, Jer 27:5. God's power is not manifested by muscle but rather by His Word. When He returns at the Second Advent, He comes with power, and His name is called the Word of God, Rev 19:11-15. As Heb 1:3 states, "He upholds all things by the word of His power." This power is also used by God to keep all believers safe for Him forever in 1Pe 1:5, "You are protected by the power of God through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time."

When we understand the omnipotence of God, we will be assured that nothing is too hard for Him. We recognize the power of prayer when we will realize that prayer is *weakness leaning on omnipotence*. No matter what you're going through or what problems or difficulties you are facing, nothing is too hard or difficult for Him to handle. As the Lord Jesus Christ said in Mat 19:26, "*With God all things are possible.*" Job said, after he went through more suffering than anyone else alive, in Job 42:2, "*I know that You can do all things, and that no purpose or plan of Yours can be restrained.*" God's plan goes on whether we are winners or losers; whether we fail or succeed, we cannot stop God's plan. God's plan goes on with or without us.

All three members of the Trinity possess omnipotence. The power or omnipotence of God is that ability and strength whereby He can bring to pass whatsoever He pleases, whatsoever His infinite wisdom may direct, and whatsoever His justice may resolve. As justice is the guardian of divine essence and the beauty of all of God's attributes, so omnipotence is that which gives life and action to the attributes of God. Omnipotence gives sovereignty the power to rule, gives love the power to express itself, gives justice the power to judge, and gives righteousness the power to evaluate. David said in Psa 62:11, "*Once God has spoken; twice I have heard this, that power belongs to God.*" All God has to do is speak once; nothing more is necessary. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but His Word abides forever.

God's power is unlimited; however, not everything that happens is from the power of God. God has allowed both angels and mankind to possess volition, and both angels and mankind have used that volition in a negative way. There was a man who fortunately learned that God will do whatever he wants to do and no one can stop Him; his name was Nebuchadnezzar. After he was through fighting with God and rebelling against Him, he finally has a change of heart and repentance in Dan 4:34-37.

*Dan 4:34-37 "But at the end of that period I, Nebuchadnezzar, raised my eyes toward heaven, and my reason returned to me, and I blessed the Most High and praised and honored Him who lives forever; for His dominion is an everlasting dominion, and His kingdom endures from generation to generation. And all the inhabitants of the earth are accounted as nothing, but He does according to His will in the host of heaven and among the inhabitants of earth; and no one can ward off His hand or say to Him, 'What hast Thou done?' At that time my reason returned to me. And my majesty and splendor were restored to me for the glory of my kingdom, and my counselors and my nobles began seeking me out; so I was reestablished in my sovereignty, and surpassing greatness was added to me. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise, exalt, and honor the King of heaven, for all His works are true and His ways just, and He is able to humble those who walk in pride."*

Eze 28:12 says concerning Satan, *"Thus says the Lord God, 'You had the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.'"* If there is anything that can destroy talent, beauty, intelligence, or anything else worthwhile, it is arrogance. It begins with the thought of arrogance, which leads to the decision and action of arrogance.

The original sin among angelic creatures, like the original sin among human creatures, occurred in perfect environment. Adam was perfect in beauty and in intellect, just as Satan was. Satan was created as the greatest genius of all God's creatures in perfect environment; he never had to acquire these things. He had everything that people ordinarily associate with happiness, but he wanted something more—God's power, and for the first time arrogance became a factor. Arrogance promotes ambition, specifically *inordinate* ambition. The lust for power has its roots in arrogance, and it is much more than the ability to manipulate people; it starts with preoccupation with self.

In Rev 12:9, Satan "deceives the whole world." His strategy is deception, and he has one goal in the life of every believer—to lead us astray. The *cosmic system* is Satan's classroom for deception. The term "cosmic system" is derived from the Greek word *kosmos*, and its meaning includes more than just "the world"; it refers to a *system*, a system of thinking, a lifestyle. The cosmic system is Satan's strategy as the ruler of this world to control believers; it is his policy for the rulership of this world. The cosmic system is composed of two separate power systems:

1. Cosmic one is Satan's exploitation of believers through their own arrogance. This is his means of controlling the human race. The cosmic system is based upon pride and arrogance, which was invented by Satan, for arrogance was his original sin.
2. Cosmic two is Satan's propaganda and indoctrination college organized to educate and promote antagonism toward anything related to God, especially the grace of God.

Cosmic one represents Satan's attitude *at the time of his prehistoric fall* in Isa 14, the five "I Will's":

- ·I will ascend to heaven.
- ·I will raise my throne above the stars of God.
- ·I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the North.
- ·I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.
- ·I will make myself like the Most High.

Cosmic two represents Satan's attitude at the time of Adam's fall in the garden of Eden, Gen 3:4-5, "You surely shall not die! For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."

In order for Satan to rule, he must accomplish two goals:

1. The control of arrogance over the believer's life. The believer becomes divorced from the reality of God's plan.
2. Antagonism toward Bible doctrine.

Only through the perception, metabolization, and application of doctrine do believers have any hope of becoming tactically victorious, complementing our Lord's strategic victory in the angelic conflict.

There are two ways in which the cosmic system can influence the unbeliever:

1. Demon possession is demon invasion of the *body of an unbeliever* by one or more demons. (Because of the indwelling of all three members of the Trinity, no demon can indwell the body of a believer.) This demon invasion cannot occur without the unbeliever's consent. Even the unbeliever has a volitional protection given by God, but under certain conditions, demons do enter the body of unbelievers. Demon possession is generally related to religion, the phallic cult, and the emotional revolt of the soul. Demons themselves possess so much energy that when they indwell a human being, many forms of neurotic and psychotic behavior are manifested. Demons themselves are not actually erratic, but their influence on the body is. Therefore, the scripture teaches that demons can cause:
  - Mental diseases, Mar 5:1-13.
  - Dumbness and deafness, Mar 9:25.
  - Dumbness and blindness, Mat 12:22.
  - Epilepsy, Mar 1:26, 9:20.
  - Convulsions, Mar 1:26, 9:20.
  - Abnormal violence, Mat 8:28.
  - Abnormal strength, Mar 5:4, Luk 8:29.
  - Raving, screaming, Mar 5:5.
  - Self-mutilation, Mar 5:5.
  - Foaming at the mouth, Mar 9:20, Luk 9:29.
  - Nakedness in public, Luk 8:27.
  - Living among dead bodies, Mar 5:3.
  - Grinding the teeth, Mar 9:18.
  - Self-destructive behavior, Mat 17:15 (exposing oneself to known danger).
2. Demon influence of unbelievers is invasion of the soul through the doctrines of demons, i.e., cosmic thinking, 1Ti 4:1-2, "But the Spirit explicitly says that in later times some will fall away from the faith, paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons, by means of the hypocrisy of liars seared in their own conscience as with a branding iron." All unbelievers live in spiritual death and are influenced by the cosmic system to varying degrees. However, unbelievers do have a great protection against Satan's system. This protection begins with his own volition, and how he responds to the only system of truth an unbeliever can understand—the laws of divine establishment. The surest way for the unbeliever to fall into Satan's cosmic system is to reject the legitimate authority in life found in the laws of divine establishment. Arrogance is the inevitable result of rejection of authority.

The believer is not vulnerable to the demonization of his body. However, the believer can come under demon influence. Demon influence is the *invasion of the soul* with Satanic propaganda, the doctrines of demons mentioned in 1Ti 4:1, all of which relate to the cosmic system. Demon invasion of one's thought affects self-consciousness, volition, and mental attitude, and many believers actually become psychotic.

*Rom 8:5-8 For those who are according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who are according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For the mind set on*

*the flesh is death, but the mind set on the Spirit is life and peace, because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God, for it is not even able to do so; and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.*

The Bible warns believers against the demonization of their soul, 1Jo 2:15-16, *“Stop loving the cosmos [cosmic one] or anything related to it. If anyone keeps loving the cosmos [cosmic one], the love of the Father [personal love for God, spiritual self-esteem] is not in Him. Because all that is in the cosmos [cosmic one], the lust of the flesh [the old sin nature controlling soul], and the lust of the eyes [motivational arrogance], and the arrogant pattern of life [functional arrogance], is not from the Father but from the cosmos.”* The believer who enters the cosmic system through sin and remains there will produce human good and evil. He gives the devil an opportunity to deceive him and destroy his spiritual life through moral or immoral degeneracy. He can escape from the cosmic system only through the *rebound technique*.

The issue of spiritual living versus cosmic living is seen in Jam 4:6, *“But He gives a greater grace. Therefore it [Pro 3:34] says, “God is opposed to the proud, but gives grace to the humble.”* God is “making war” against believers who allow arrogance to control their lives. James continues in Jam 4:7, *“Submit therefore to God [life inside the predesigned plan of God]. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.”* You resist the devil by life inside the predesigned plan of God, the filling of the Spirit, enforced and genuine humility. The devil cannot touch any believer inside the predesigned plan of God. In Jam 4:8, we are instructed to *“Draw near to God [spiritual momentum] and He will draw near to you [motivational virtue]. Cleanse your hands, you sinners [rebound]; and purify your hearts, you double-minded.”* Then verse nine adds, *“Be miserable and mourn and weep; let your laughter be turned into mourning, and your joy to gloom.”* This is the mandate to every believer living in the cosmic system. Since most believers are living in the cosmic system today, they are miserable, and they are constantly trying to compensate for their misery by finding some superficial system of happiness. It is absolutely impossible for any believer to live in the cosmic system and have happiness. Finally, we are given a great command and promise in verse 10, *“Humble yourselves in the presence of the Lord, and He will exalt you.”* Humility, which is freedom from arrogance, means waiting on God’s timing instead of following our own will. This is life, function, and momentum inside the predesigned plan of God, and becoming a winner believer and an invisible hero.

# SATAN'S COSMIC SYSTEM, PART 2

1 Timothy 6:6-12

08/24/03

*Revelation 12:9 And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world.*

The Greek word for “deceives” is *planao*, which means to deceive, lead others away from the truth, cause others to wander, or lead others aside, and this is Satan’s goal for every believer. Satan has two different systems that he uses to deceive the people of the world, called the *cosmic systems*. This is derived from the Greek word *kosmos*, which means more than just the “world”; it refers to a system—a system of thinking or a lifestyle. Therefore, the cosmic system is Satan’s strategy as the ruler of this world to control believers. Satan’s cosmic system is composed of two separate power systems. Cosmic one is Satan’s exploitation of believers through their own arrogance, Eph 2:1-2. Cosmic two is Satan’s propaganda and indoctrination college designed to educate and promote antagonism toward anything related to God, especially the grace of God.

Satan has developed a system that deceives mankind for life, and it is a system based upon fear, especially fear of death, Heb 2:14-15. Satan promotes fear of death as a part of his cosmic philosophy, and this philosophy controls the thinking of millions of people. In 1Jo 5:19, *“We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in the power of the evil one [Satan’s power systems of cosmic viewpoint or worldly thinking].”* This is why Solomon came to the conclusions that he did, concerning human goals and human plans in Ecc 1:2,9,14—*“Vanity!”* Many people think they are pursuing a life of freedom when in reality they are in total bondage. As we have seen, Solomon tested the worldly life to the maximum, and only discovered the vanity of the cosmic system. He tried many experiments in his quest for happiness:

1. *Anthropocentric academic speculation*, or regarding humans as the central element of the universe and living for them. His conclusion: Ecc 1:14, *“Vanity and chasing after wind.”*
2. Happiness in pleasure—the viewpoint of “eat, drink and be merry.” His conclusion: Ecc 2:11, *“Thus I considered all my activities which my hands had done and the labor which I had exerted, and behold all was vanity and striving after wind.”*
3. Living for his family. His conclusion: Ecc 2:17, *“So I hated life, for the work which had been done under the sun was grievous to me; because everything is futility and striving after wind.”*
4. The philosophy of time orientation, the “organized life” experiment. His conclusion: Ecc 3:9, *“What profit is there to the worker from that in which he toils?”*
5. Money, wealth, and prosperity. His conclusion: Ecc 5:10, *“He who loves money will not be satisfied with money, nor he who loves abundance with its income. This too is vanity.”*
6. Building a reputation. His conclusion: Ecc 6:9, *“Futility and a striving after wind.”*
7. Sex and intimacy. His conclusion: Ecc 7:26, *“And I discovered more bitter than death the woman whose heart is snares and nets, whose hands are chains. One who is pleasing to God will escape from her, but the sinner will be captured by her.”*
8. The “hero” image, Ecc 9. This too was vanity.

There is nothing new under the sun, and Satan has been lying to members of the human race ever since he lied to Adam and the woman.

Satan’s goal is to first blind the unbeliever from the Gospel of grace, 2Co 4:3-4. After salvation, Satan’s goal is to cause the believer to remain in the cosmic system. Just as the predesigned plan of God is the divine “factory” for the manufacture of spiritual winners, so the cosmic system is the factory for the manufacture of losers.

In cosmic one, the believer *grieves* the Holy Spirit, Eph 4:30; in cosmic two, he quenches the Holy Spirit, 1Th 5:19. On the other hand, the winner is said to be “filled with the Spirit,” Eph 5:18, and to

“walk in the Spirit,” Gal 5:16, when he is living inside the predesigned plan of God. Once the believer sins and enters the cosmic system, he is grieving the Spirit until rebound occurs. Grieving the Spirit is a prolonged stay in cosmic one without rebound, resulting in instability. The believer living in the cosmic system is classified under six categories:

1. An enemy of the Cross, Phi 3:18.
2. An enemy of God, Jam 4:4.
3. A hater of God, Joh 15:23.
4. Anti-Christ (against Christ), 1Jo 2:18,22, 4:3.
5. A carnal believer, Rom 8:7, 1Co 3:3.
6. Double-minded, Jam 4:8.

Satan has compiled a mass of thoughts, opinions, speculations, systems of false doctrines, panaceas, plans, and systems for all categories for deceit. These are the policies and objectives by which he seeks to control the world that he rules. Satan seeks to control both mankind and the millions of fallen angels. However, although Satan is the ruler of this world, he does not necessarily control the people of this world; that depends upon individual volition.

In cosmic living, you are so preoccupied with yourself that you assume that any speaker who pleases you and stimulates you must be telling you the truth. Once a believer or unbeliever remains in the cosmic system long enough, all his norms and standards related to truth are gone. The Apostle Paul warned believers of deception in 1Co 15:33, *“Do not be deceived: evil company corrupts good character.”* Evil company does not just refer to the common inclination of immorality, but it entails anyone who is under the influence of the *cosmos* and filled with evil. The Greek word for “corrupt” is *phtheiro*, and in this passage it refers to the destruction and ruin of one’s life through cosmic viewpoint and garbage in the soul. In Rom 16:17-18, the apostle gives us a stern command concerning those who have been deceived and are deceiving others: *“Now I urge you, brethren, be alert for those who cause dissensions and hindrances to doctrine [they cause apostasies], contrary to the doctrine which you have learned, and turn away from them. For such individuals are slaves, not of our Lord Jesus Christ, but of their own emotions and appetites, and by their smooth and flattering speech they deceive the right lobes [hearts] of the stupid.* We are also cautioned against the deceiving teacher in 2Pe 2:15, *“Forsaking the right way [the predesigned plan of God] they have become deceived, having followed the way of Balaam [personal gain], who loved the wages of unrighteousness.”* They cannot gain anything on their own, so they lie, and cheat, and steal that which belongs to another. Deceived by the kingdom of darkness, they are willing to sell out others for the sake of personal gain.

The degrees of deception correspond to the degrees of apostasy. The longer one resides in the cosmic system without recovering, the more he becomes deceived. Past a certain point, you cannot distinguish between the believer in the cosmic system and the unbeliever. The cosmic system does not distinguish between its students, and is equally effective in both believer and unbeliever. Therefore, deception is a process of demonization in which every facet of the soul is eventually controlled by demonic doctrine, so that there is a complete personality change to some form of sociopathic or psychopathic personality. The relative stages of deception in the cosmic system are as follows:

1. Reaction and distraction.
2. The frantic search for happiness.
3. Operation “Boomerang” (everything backfires).
4. Emotional revolt of the soul.
5. Permanent negative volition.
6. Blackout of the soul.
7. Scar tissue of the soul.
8. A total state of apostasy.



Deception results from not understanding the scriptures and the power of God, Mat 22:29, Psa 95:10, Heb 3:10. Satan also uses signs and wonders to deceive believers and unbelievers, Mat 24:24.

The Apostle John warned us to not deceive ourselves, but to acknowledge the truth about ourselves, 1Jo 1:8-9, "If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and truth is not in us. If we confess our sins he is faithful and just to forgive us of our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness." One of the greatest forms of deception today found in the church is the idea that a believer can reach a point where he no longer sins. This is what some call "sinless perfection," "eradication of the flesh," or a "potential to sinlessness," but the Word of God calls it apostasy and heresy. The worst sins a believer commits are the sins of the soul, not the sins of the body. In Pro 6:16-19, out of the seven worst sins listed, six of them have to do with the sins of the soul, and one has to do with murder.

Remember that deception is a reality in our day and age; in fact, the majority of your loved ones and friends are under deception according to the Word of God, Rev 12:9, "*And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world.*" The greatest form of deception is spiritual deception, i.e., religion, Satan's greatest trump card. Our Lord had some very strong words concerning religion and the greatest religious church of all time in Rev 18:21-23. This church had a light but lost it; they stopped teaching doctrine. Inevitably, it is rejecting Bible doctrine that causes any organization to lose the light they once possessed. Therefore, commercialization, money-making schemes, and gimmicks are needed for the perpetuation of the religious organization.

There are three reasons believers lose out in the plan of God:

1. They make bad decisions from a position of weakness in the cosmic system (negative volition toward doctrine).
2. They lose control of their personal lives.
3. They have no personal sense of destiny.

Without those three factors, you just simply cannot function and be spiritually self-sustaining. You will never be happy; there is no one who will ever make you happy, because only truth (what you think) can you make you happy. There is no greater illustration of this than Satan. He is the super-achiever of all time; no creature ever achieved more than he did. No creature ever gained control of this earth, and ruled it as long as Satan has. Satan has been ruling this earth for perhaps 8,000 years, and he is still not happy. Satan is the most powerful, beautiful, and personable, and intelligent of all creatures, yet he is the epitome of misery and unhappiness, and he is always taking his unhappiness out on someone else.

In Rev 12:9, Satan is "thrown down to earth." All his achievements end with him being evicted from heaven and hurled down to earth. Satan has deceived his fallen angels all this time. He sold millions of angels on the promise of a "better deal," and people are always looking for that better deal. This verse is the beginning of the eschatology of the devil's desperation. Satan has only a short time (3½ years) before the Second Advent. Once the Second Advent takes place, Satan and the fallen angels will be incarcerated. Satan will be imprisoned in the Abyss for 1,000 years, Rev 20:1-3. After this, he will be given his freedom for a short time, and he will instigate a conspiracy on earth, the Gog revolution, and he will then be cast into the lake of fire forever. All other fallen angels are thrown directly into the lake of fire at the Second Advent, Mat 25:41. This is what we call the "baptism of fire." All Satan's fallen angels will share his fate. To identify with a loser is to become a loser. This is why we must avoid the cosmic system. Everyone who rejects the saving work of Christ on the Cross has joined Satan and the fallen angels.

Having true biblical virtue is the beginning of perfect happiness. This is something that Satan rejected and you can accept; you can have what Satan will never have. However, having perfect happiness in time also means that God will give us suffering for blessing.

*1Ti 6:6-12 But living the spiritual life keeps on being a great means of prosperity when accompanied by contentment [capacity for life]. For we have brought not even one thing into this world; it is obvious that we cannot take anything out of it either. Now, having nourishing food and a change of clothes, with these we shall be content. But those who desire to get rich fall into temptation and a trap, also into many stupid and harmful desires [lusts] which drown those individuals into ruin and destruction. For you see the love of money keeps on being a root of all sorts of evil through which [love for money] certain ones by intensively desiring it have gone astray from the doctrine and pierced themselves with many types of pain. But flee from these things, you man of God; and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, perseverance and gentleness. Fight the good fight of faith; take hold of the eternal life to which you were called, and you made the good confession in the presence of many witnesses.*

In this passage, “contentment” refers to perfect happiness, beginning with spiritual self-esteem, continuing in spiritual autonomy, and completed in spiritual maturity. If you are content with the basic things and you grow in perfect happiness, then God can trust you with the most magnificent things in life, in your escrow blessings for time, 2Co 12:10, *“Therefore I am well content [perfect happiness] with weaknesses [providential preventative suffering]: in insults [people testing], with distresses [thought testing], with persecutions [system testing], with difficulties [disaster testing] on behalf of Christ. For when I am weak, then I am strong.”* Providential preventative suffering at spiritual self-esteem is designed to put you in a state of weakness in which no human solution can solve the problems you are facing. Whatever the solution, it must be a divine solution, from your own soul’s resources of Bible doctrine. The four types of testing mentioned in this verse are “warm-up’s” for spiritual self-esteem in order to advance to spiritual autonomy: (1) people testing, (2) thought testing, (3) system testing, and (4) disaster testing. You pass these tests by beginning to apply perfect happiness.

In this Church-age, God has provided a well-organized system for us to have fantastic blessing in the midst of suffering. Suffering can be just as great a blessing as any prosperous circumstances. Providential preventative suffering brings you to the point where you realize life and the devil are bigger than you, and that you will not be able to solve your problems on your own. Your strength comes from the use of the problem-solving devices. True strength comes from using divine power to match your weakness, rather than using human power, which only holds back God’s grace provision for you. Heb 13:5 is another important passage on contentment: *“Let your lifestyle be free from the love for money, being content with what you have. For He Himself has said [in Deu 31:6], ‘I will never leave you, nor will I ever forsake you.’”* There is nothing wrong with money, but when money becomes your master, you become its pitiful slave. Money was not designed to bring happiness. The objective is to have money as your slave and perfect happiness as your master. If you are content with what you have, you have perfect happiness in spiritual autonomy. Heb 13:5 gives a promise—this is God’s guarantee to you from the day of your salvation, based on God’s perfect integrity. He will never leave or forsake you. This promise assures you of both temporal and eternal security. However, God, as a caring Father, will still discipline us when necessary and allow us to reap what we sow.

# THE SECOND ADVENT OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

Revelation 12:10

08/31/03

The devil and all fallen angels were sentenced to the lake of fire at the end of the prehistoric angelic conflict, before man was created. However, the devil appealed his sentence, and God created man to resolve the angelic conflict, and that is why we are here. Fallen angels have joined Satan in his challenge of the Creator, therefore, they must share the fate of Satan, Mat 25:41. Members of the human race who reject the saving work of Christ on the Cross have joined Satan and the fallen angels in challenging the Creator, the Lord Jesus Christ; therefore, all unbelievers will go to the lake of fire.

The proclamation of victory given by the angelic herald in heaven is found in Rev 12:10. After the expulsion of Satan and the fallen angels from heaven, we read, *“And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, ‘Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.’”* The Greek verb translated “heard” is *akouo*, which means to hear or to listen, indicating that the one who is listening is teachable. The *aorist tense* of this verb regards the action of the verb as being completed, which means that in order to learn, you must have *a time to listen*. You can not talk and learn at the same time; it requires concentration.

Your willingness to hear reveals your love for God. No person can truly love the Lord apart from hearing the word of God—*akouo*—the consistent intake of Bible doctrine. All believers are commanded to love God in Mar 12:30, *“You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.”* If a believer really loves God, it will be manifested by his desire to hear God’s words, Joh 8:47, *“He who is [keeps on being] of God hears the words of God; for this reason you do not hear them, because you are not of God.”* The word “hears” is *akouei*, meaning to hear in an audience, to listen, to concentrate, to understand, to learn, and to give a hearing. Our Lord said in Joh 14:15 *“If you love Me, you will keep My commands.”* The Greek verb translated “keep” is *tereo*, which means to *guard* something that belongs to you. It also means to watch over carefully, to keep, to hold, to preserve and to pay attention to, and therefore to retain. We should never take the communication of doctrine for granted.

It is doctrine abiding in Christians, not works, that reveals to the Father how much we love Him. If you guard or keep God’s Word in you, God’s love will be in you, Joh 15:10, *“If you keep My commands, you will abide in My love; just as I have kept My Father’s commands, and abide in His love.”* Your capacity to love depends on your intake of doctrine. If you personally love God, then you will also love doctrine more than wealth, Psa 119:72,127, 62:10. Loving God also means hating worldliness and human viewpoint. Satan is not trying to tempt people with sin but rather with evil, Psa 119:113, *“I hate those who are double-minded, but I love Thy doctrine.”* Doctrine allows us to love Him whom we have not seen, 1Pe 1:8, *“Though you have not seen Him, you love Him, and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory.”* This speaks of soul love. It is possible to love someone you cannot see.

Keeping with doctrine is the only way to love with God’s love, 1Jo 2:5, *“But whoever keeps [tereo] His word, in him the love of God has truly been perfected. By this we know that we are in Him.”* This means to reach a point of maturity; it also means to come to the place where God’s love can be released. Loving God is also revealed with impersonal love toward one another, 1Jo 4:7, *“Beloved, let us love one another, for love is from God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God.”* The Greek verb translated “knows” is *ginosko*, and the *present tense* means that the more we love, the more we are progressively getting to know Him. Loving God and His people can only come through knowledge of doctrine. Loving God requires occupation with Christ, walking in doctrine, and serving with all our heart and soul, Deu 10:12, *“And now, what does the Lord your God require from you, but to*

*respect the Lord your God, to walk in all His ways and love Him, and to serve the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul.”*

Love for God is the believer’s capacity to love God and to respond to God’s love based on Bible doctrine in his soul. Apart from the daily function of perception, metabolization, and application of Bible doctrine, it is impossible to love God. Since God is invisible, we must see and love Him through doctrine in the soul. We can only see God and love Him through His Word. You cannot love God unless you know God, and you cannot know God unless you have metabolized enough pertinent doctrine, 1Pe 1:8, Eph 3:18-19, Heb 6:10, 2Ti 1:13-14, Col 3:1-2.

*Rev 12:10 And I heard [akouo] a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.”*

Here we see the importance of the divine order of *akouo*, hearing the word of God, and then *tereo*, guarding the word of God in our heart, which leads to *ginosko*, knowing God, resulting in personal love for God. Our personal love for God results in impersonal unconditional love for all mankind and the execution the spiritual life. This is the reason why God wants our heart, Pro 4:23, *“Watch over your heart with all diligence, for from it flow the springs of life.”*

*“And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, ‘Now the salvation...’* The word “salvation” is the nominative singular subject form of the Greek noun *soteria*, which sometimes refers to salvation in the sense of redemption, but here it simply means deliverance. The “deliverance” here is the Second Advent, which is a time of deliverance for winner believers of the Tribulation, most whom survive the Tribulation period, while some of them die as martyrs to demonstrate the power of doctrine. This has brought us to the doctrine of the Second Advent.

#### The Doctrine of the Second Advent

**Point 1:** Definition. The term “advent” means the coming or arrival of something extremely important.

There are two advents of Jesus Christ depicted in the Word of God. The First Advent begins with the virgin birth and concludes with the resurrection, ascension, and session. The first prophecy of the First Advent was given in Gen 3:15, *“And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed; he shall bruise you on the head, and you shall bruise him on the heel.”* The Jewish prophecy of the First Advent is found in Isa 7:14, 9:6.

*Isa 7:14 “Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: behold, a virgin will be with child and bear a son, and she will call His name Immanuel.*

*Isa 9:6 For a child will be born to us, a son will be given to us; and the government will rest on His shoulders; and His name will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace.*

The historical fulfillment of the First Advent is found in such passages as Mat 1:19-25, *“And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not wanting to disgrace her, desired to put her away secretly. But when he had considered this, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, ‘Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary as your wife; for that which has been conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she will bear a Son; and you shall call His name Jesus, for it is He who will save His people from their sins.’ Now all this took place that what was spoken by the Lord through the prophet might be fulfilled, saying, ‘Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel,’ which translated means, ‘God with us.’ And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took her as his wife, and kept her a virgin until she gave birth to a Son; and he called His name Jesus.”*

The result of the First Advent is seen in Joh 1:14, Rom 1:3, 1Ti 3:16, Heb 2:14, Phi 2:5-11.

*Joh 1:14 And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.*

*Rom 1:3 concerning His Son, who was born of a descendant of David according to the flesh,*

*1Ti 3:16 And by common confession great is the mystery of godliness: He who was revealed in the flesh.*

*Phi 2:5-11 Have this attitude in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus, who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant, and being made in the likeness of men. And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross. Therefore also God highly exalted Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those who are in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.*

During the First Advent, Jesus Christ in Hypostatic Union accomplished the strategic victory of the angelic conflict and the salvation of the human race. This strategic victory bestows His battlefield royalty. He must have a royal family to accompany His royal title—the Church. The Second Advent is designed to reveal Him as both battlefield royalty and Jewish royalty. He returns to earth in resurrection body and Hypostatic Union.

Point 2: The Distinction Between the Rapture and the Second Advent. At the Rapture of the Church, Christ does not return to the earth as in the Second Advent; we meet Him in the air.

The Rapture is a private event, Act 1:11, “They also said, “Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, will come in just the same way as you have watched Him go into heaven.” The Second Advent is public, Rev 1:7, “Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, even those who pierced Him; and all the tribes of the earth will mourn over Him. Even so. Amen.”

The Rapture will occur in the air, 1Th 4:16-17, “For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always be with the Lord.” The Second Advent will occur on earth, Zec 14:4, “And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which is in front of Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives will be split in its middle from east to west by a very large valley, so that half of the mountain will move toward the north and the other half toward the south.”

The Rapture is a judgment of believer’s works, 2Co 5:10. The Second Advent is a Baptism of Fire, Mat 25:31-46.

At the Rapture, the Church goes to heaven, Joh 14:3. At the Second Advent the Church returns with Christ, 1Th 3:13, “...so that He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before our God and Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all His saints.”

At the Rapture, the Holy Spirit is removed, 2Th 2:6. At the Second Advent there is the removal of Satan, Rev 20:1-3.

At the Rapture, there is an immediate change in the believer’s body, Phi 3:21. At the Second Advent the earth is changed, Zec 14:9, Rom 8:19-22.

At the Rapture, Christ appears as the Groom. At the Second Advent, Christ appears as the Messiah.

The Rapture is the end of the Church-age. The Second Advent is the end of the Jewish age. At the Rapture, Israel is under the fifth cycle of discipline. The Second Advent is the termination of the fifth cycle of discipline.

At the Rapture, believers are taken from the earth, 1Th 4:13-18. At the Second Advent, unbelievers are taken from the earth, Mat 24:37-43. (Mat 24 has always been a passage misunderstood by many as referring to the Rapture, but it does not.)

The Rapture is a time of comfort, 1Th 4:18. The Second Advent is a time of terror, Rev 6:15-17.

Point 3: Analogies to the Second Advent.

1. The analogy of nature—lightning, Mat 24:27, “For just as the lightning comes from the east, and flashes even to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of Man be.”
2. The Second Advent will be seen by all, Rev 1:7, “Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see Him.”
3. The Second Advent comes with great speed, Rev 22:7,12.
4. The Second Advent disturbs and frightens the unenlightened, Rev 6:15-17.
5. The Second Advent warns of a coming storm, the storm of coming judgment:
  - i. Annihilation of the invading armies.
  - ii. Judgment of Satan and the fallen angels.
  - iii. Judgment of the beast and false prophet.
  - iv. The Baptism of Fire, removing all unbelievers from the earth.
  - v. Administration of the fifth cycle of discipline to certain nations.
6. The historical analogy, Mat 24:37-41. In Mat 24:37, it will “like the days of Noah,” which points to people living under the wrong priorities (although it may also refer to the presence of super-creatures on the earth once again).

*Mat 24:37-38 “For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah. For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, they were marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark.”*

Marrying, eating, and drinking (normal pleasures in life) were more important than Bible doctrine.

“They do not know” that a major judgment is on the horizon, Mat 24:39, “*They did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so shall the coming of the Son of Man be.*” In the Tribulation, as in the time of Noah, people cannot tell what is about to happen because they have no Bible doctrine in their souls. Therefore, in verses 40-41, the believer is left and the unbeliever is taken in the baptism of fire, Mat 24:40-41, “*Then there shall be two men in the field; one will be taken, and one will be left. Two women will be grinding at the mill; one will be taken, and one will be left.*” In Noah’s day, unbelievers were removed by water; this time it will be by fire. As always, grace precedes judgment, and there is great evangelism given in the Tribulation before the disaster hits.

# THE SECOND ADVENT OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 2

Revelation 22:20  
09/07/03

We are now studying the proclamation of victory and the beginning of the fulfillment of the promises to Israel, which we find in Rev 12:10. After the eviction of Satan and the fallen angels from heaven, we read, *“And I heard a loud voice in heaven [the voice of a Seraph angel], saying, ‘Now the salvation [deliverance, namely the Second Advent] and the power [Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], and the kingdom of our God [the Millennium] and the authority of His Christ [the rulership of the Lord Jesus Christ during the Millennium] have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.”* The Greek word for “heard” is *akouo*, meaning to listen, to hear, to concentrate, and to hear in an audience, indicating that the one who is listening is *teachable*. This winner angel not only listened, but he listened and *learned*.

This is a proclamation of the defeat of Satan in the realm of angelic heraldry. We can learn something from this angel, the one who made the proclamation, this King of Arms, the herald angel. In Rev 12:10, we see one of the angels that received this highest order; he received six wings, and became a Seraph angel, which is the highest rank. A Seraph is an angel who was once lower than Satan, before the angelic conflict began. However, this angel was a plugger, and he hung in there, and with faithfulness to the Word and to truth, he became a winner, and now he ranks superior to Satan and all the fallen angels for all eternity. He is one of the highest-ranking angels in the angelic college of heralds. His name is not given to us, but his message is: “It pays to be a plugger, it pays to stay with truth, it pays to stay with Bible doctrine.”

Satan became a loser through his arrogance, his inordinate ambition, and his lust for power, whereas the Seraph angel became a winner through his consistent perception of doctrine, and the fulfillment of the plan of God for the angelic creatures. This angel had failed, but he recovered from his failure. If you want to succeed as this angel did in Rev 12:10 and be used by God in a mighty way with a *“megaten [great] phonen [voice],”* then you must learn not to quit. A “great voice” belongs to a man or woman with a message, with something valuable to say, with words of wisdom. If you desire true success as this winner angel eventually attained, then you must realize that true success is determined by how high you bounce back once you hit bottom. You can choose to be a winner or a loser. Winners make goals; losers make excuses.

*Rev 12:10 And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation...”*

The word “salvation” is the *nominative singular subject* form of the Greek noun *soteria*, which sometimes means salvation in the sense of redemption, but usually it simply refers to deliverance. The correct translation should be, *“And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now deliverance...”* This “deliverance” is the Second Advent of Jesus Christ, which is a time of deliverance for believers alive on the earth at that time.

The Rapture	The Second Advent
Private, Acts 1:11.	Public, Rev 1:7.
In the air, 1Th 4:17.	On earth, Zec 14:4.
Judgment of believer’s works, 2Co 5:10.	Baptism of fire, Mat 25:31-36.
Church goes to Heaven, Joh 14:3.	Church returns with Christ, 1Th 3:13.
Holy Spirit is removed, 2Th 2:6.	Removal of Satan, Rev 20:1-3.
Change in believer’s body, Phi 3:21.	Earth is changed, Zec 14:9, Rom 8:19-22.
Christ appears as the groom.	Christ appears as the Messiah.
End of the Church-age.	End of the Jewish age.

Israel under the fifth cycle of discipline.	Termination of the fifth cycle of discipline.
Believers taken from the earth, 1Th 4:13-18.	Unbelievers taken from the earth, Mat 24:37-43.
A time of comfort, 1Th 4:18.	A time of terror, Rev 6:15-17.

**Point 4:** The Second Advent and Armageddon. Armageddon is a campaign in the last world war of history, when Jesus Christ comes back to slaughter the anti-Semitic armies, Exo 14:14, Jos 5:13-6:2, Isa 37:36, Eze 38:16. Our Lord comes back to wage war, and He kills more people at this time than at any other time in human history. There are two sources of righteous violence—the Lord Jesus Christ and the laws of divine establishment, Eze 39:11-12; Joe 2:20; Zec 12:2-3; Rev 14:20, 19:15.

**Point 5:** The Second Advent and Operation Footstool. This is the final victory of Jesus Christ over Satan and the fallen angels. Psa 110:1 is the prophesy of the climax to the First Advent, the strategic victory of Christ: *“The Lord says to my Lord: ‘Sit at My right hand, until I make Thine enemies a footstool for Thy feet.’”* According to Heb 1:13, 10:13 the Lord Jesus Christ has received His battlefield royalty and is now waiting.

The chronology is as follows:

1. During the Church-age, the Royal Family of God (not Israel) represents Christ on earth.
2. After the Rapture, the Age of Israel resumes.
3. During the Tribulation, the Royal Family is being prepared in heaven.
4. The Bride receives a body like Jesus Christ’s, Phi 3:21, 1Th 5:23. The bride then returns with Christ in Operation Footstool.
5. Operation footstool is executed in 1Th 3:13, Rev 19:6-8.
6. Satan is locked up for 1,000 years, Rev 20:1-3. Then comes the triumphal procession of Christ, Zec 13:2 cf. Col 2:15; 1Co 15:24-25. Christ then rules over Israel and the entire earth, bringing perfect environment to all the world.

**Point 6:** The Baptism of Fire and the Second Advent. The baptism of fire is the means by which all the unbelievers are removed from the earth and cast into fire. Only mature believers of the Church-age will rule with Christ in the Millennium, 2Th 1:7-9, Rev 2:26-28. Jesus Christ first mentioned the baptism of fire in Mat 3:11-12, Luk 3:16-17. Mat 24:36-41 is an analogy to the baptism of fire. The Jewish baptism of fire is found in, Eze 20:34-38; the Gentile baptism of fire is found in Mat 25:31-46. The baptism of fire, which is used to evangelize the Jews in the Church-age, vindicates the character of God, Rev 19:11.

The Parables of the Baptism of Fire:

- i. The wheat and the tares, Mat 13:47.
- ii. The bad fish, Mat 13:37-38.
- iii. The ten virgins, Mat 25:1-13.

**Point 7:** The Second Advent and the Millennium. The Second Advent introduces the Millennium and perfect environment on the earth. Satan and demons are removed, Rev 20:1-3, and it will be a time of maximum spirituality, Isa 65:24, as evangelism continues on the earth. Israel is restored as a client nation to God, Isa 5:26-30, Zec 2:28-29, and all the unconditional covenants to Israel are fulfilled, Dan 9:24. The nations of the world enjoy perfect environment, including:

- Universal peace, Psa 46:9, Isa 2:4, Hos 2:18, Mic 4:3.
- Universal prosperity, Psa 72:7,16.
- Perfect world government under Jesus Christ and the Royal Family, Isa 11:1-2, Zec 14:9.
- Perfect objectivity in the administration of justice, Isa 11:3-5, Psa 72:12-14.
- A complete change in nature. Today creation shares the bondage of sin, Rom 8:19-22, but is released from this bondage in the Millennium, Isa 35. See also Isa 11:6-9, 65:25.
- A population explosion (no death except for capital punishment).



Satan starts the Gog revolution with the unbelievers on earth after his release from prison, Rev 20:7-10.

That to which all Scripture looks forward and to which all history presses towards is the Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ to the earth. At that time God's purpose for which the Son came into the world will be realized. Redemption will have been accomplished and the sovereignty of God manifested on the earth.

Point 8: The Views of the Second Advent. Historically, there have been four major views concerning the Second Advent of Christ.

1. The non-literal, or spiritualized, view. This view denies that there will be a literal, bodily, personal return of Christ to the earth. This is a common modern view of the Lord's return which identifies the coming of Christ as a "perpetual advance" of Christ in the Church that includes many particular events. Those who believe in this view claim that the promises of the Second Coming are fulfilled by our Lord's "spiritual" presence with His people, which was "introduced by the coming of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost," then accompanied by the overthrow of Jerusalem, and then ultimately fulfilled by continual spiritual advance in the church. They use passages such as Gal 6:16 to say that God has rejected true Israel and that we are now the new "spiritual Israel": *"And those who will walk by this rule, peace and mercy be upon them, and upon the Israel of God."* They also misquote Rom 9:6, *"But it is not as though the word of God has failed. For they are not all Israel who are descended from Israel."* However, the church does not receive any of the covenants given to Israel, and God has given numerous promises that He will return to deliver the Jews.

Those who hold to this non-literal view believe the Second Advent it is not a single event, but that it includes all the events of the Church-age, which are part of the work of Christ. Such a view is based on disbelief in the literal interpretation of the Word of God, and on the "spiritualizing" method of interpretation.

2. The postmillennial view. The postmillennial view, popular among covenant theologians of the post-Reformation period, believe that through preaching the Gospel the whole world will be Christianized and brought to submission to the Gospel before the return of Christ. Many Calvinists and Lutherans promote this view. These are the groups that want to change the world and make it a better place to live. They mix church with state which is a dangerous error. Because they believe that they are also spiritual Israel, they want the government to institute the Mosaic Law in our nation.

The term *postmillennialism* is derived from the theory that Christ returns *after* the Millennium. The followers of this view hold to a literal Second Advent and Millennium, but they believe we are in the Millennial kingdom now and we must change the way of the world. They generally follow the Old Testament teaching on the nature of that kingdom.

3. The amillennial view. The amillennial view holds that there will be no literal Millennium on the earth following the Second Advent. Amillennialists believe that all the prophecies concerning the kingdom are being fulfilled period spiritually by the church. They deny a literal reign of Christ upon the earth. Satan is considered "bound" at the First Coming of Christ. They believe that the present age between the First and Second Advents is the fulfillment of the Millennium. Their view can be summed up in the idea that there will be no more Millennium than there is now, and that the eternal state immediately follows the Second Advent of Christ. Their problem is over the question as to whether there will be a literal Millennium for Israel or whether the promises concerning the Millennium are now being fulfilled in the Church, either on earth or in heaven.

4. The pre-millennial, biblical view. The pre-millennial view is the view that holds that Christ will return to earth, literally and bodily, before the Millennial Age begins and that, by His presence,

a kingdom will be instituted over which He will reign. In this kingdom, all of Israel's covenants will be literally fulfilled. It will continue for 1,000 years, after which the kingdom will be given by the Son to the Father, when it will merge with His eternal kingdom. The central issue in this position is whether the Scriptures are to be fulfilled literally or symbolically.

The general theme of the return of Christ has the unique distinction of being the first prophecy uttered by man (Jud 1:14-15) and the last message of the ascended Christ, as well as being the last words of the Bible (Rev 22:20-21). The doctrine of the Second Coming of Christ is unique because it occupies a larger portion of the Scriptures than any other doctrine, and it is the outstanding theme of prophecy in both the Old and New Testaments.

Point 9: Unfulfilled prophecy makes the Second Advent absolutely essential.

- Our Lord has promised that He shall come Himself, Act 1:11.
- The dead will hear His voice, Joh 5:28.
- He will step upon the same Mount Olivet from which He ascended, Zec 14:4.
- He will come back in flaming fire, 2Th 1:8.
- He will come in the clouds of Heaven with power and great glory, Mat 24:30, 1Pe 1:7.
- He will stand on the earth again, Job 19:2.
- The church will come with Him, 1Th 3:13, Jud 1:14.
- Every eye shall see Him, Rev 1:7.
- He shall destroy Anti-Christ, 2Th 2:8.
- He shall sit on His throne, Mat 25:31.
- All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will judge them, Mat 25:32.
- He shall have the throne of David, Isa 9:6-7.
- His throne will be on earth, Jer 23:5-6.
- He shall have a kingdom, Dan 7:13-14.
- He shall rule with His saints, Dan 7:18-27, Rev 5:10.
- All kings and nations shall serve Him, Psa 72:11, Isa 49:6-7, Rev 15:4.
- The kingdoms of this world shall become His kingdom, Zec 9:10, Rev 11:15.
- The people shall gather unto Him, Gen 49:10.
- The people shall come and worship the King, Zec 14:16, Psa 86:9.
- That He shall build up Zion, Psa 102:16.
- His throne will be in Jerusalem, Jer 3:17, Isa 33:20-21.
- The Apostles shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel, Mat 19:28, Luk 22:28-30.
- He shall rule all nations, Psa 2:8-9, Rev 2:27.
- He shall rule with judgment and justice, Psa 9:7.
- The temple in Jerusalem will be rebuilt, Eze 40-48.
- The glory of the Lord will come into the temple, Eze 43:2-5, 44:4.
- The glory of the Lord will be revealed, Isa 40:5.
- The wilderness shall be a fruitful field, Isa 32:15.
- The desert will blossom as the rose, Isa 35:1-2.

# THE SECOND ADVENT OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, PART 3

Revelation 12:10

09/14/03

We have now completed the first part of Rev 12:10 which says, And I heard a loud voice in heaven [this is the voice of a winner angel, a seraph], saying, "Now the deliverance [Second Advent] and the power," The deliverance means the second-advent is on its way.

The word for power is the Greek noun *dunamis* which is a reference to TLJC as the power of God [that is Jesus Christ in hypostatic union, undiminished deity, true humanity in one person forever]. Jesus Christ returns in the power of His hypostatic union, which includes His omnipotence as deity, and His impeccability as resurrected humanity.

Next we have the phrase, *and the kingdom of our God*. The word kingdom is the Greek noun *basilea* which refers to the millennial kingdom or the Father's plan for the last one-thousand years of history. God the Father's plan for Jesus Christ to rule the world beginning at the second-advent. The time of perfect environment on the earth.

*Rev 12:10, And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now deliverance [Second advent], and the power, [that is Jesus Christ in hypostatic union, undiminished deity, true humanity in one person forever] and the kingdom of our God [the Father's plan for the millennial reign of our Lord Jesus Christ] and the authority of His Christ have come,*

As a member of the human race, TLJC has authority under the plan of God the Father to rule the earth for the last dispensation of history. With this authority, Christ's rule will provide perfect environment, so that human history will terminate as it began with our original parents in the garden, Adam and Ishshah, under perfect environment. History began with perfect environment, history will terminate with perfect environment.

We saw that In the first period of perfect environment, the Garden of Eden, the woman was not deceived but she was "quite deceived" and the man took his cue from the woman and did likewise. This is why the apostle Paul said in 1Ti 2:11, *Let a woman quietly receive instruction with entire submissiveness. But I do not allow a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man, I do not allow a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man, but to remain quiet. For it was Adam who was first created, and then Eve. And it was not Adam who was deceived, but the woman being quite deceived, fell into transgression.*

It says "quite deceived" because there had to be a series of thoughts, namely negative thoughts leading her to the tree, talking to the serpent, and dissatisfied with what she had. You don't just make one negative decision and have the Bible state that you were "quite deceived."

There had to be a series of events leading up to this deception. It all began with her thinking or her thought process. It's just like the fall of Satan. It all began with thought, a thought process.

*Isa 14:13-14, "But you said in your heart, I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God, And I will sit on the mount of assembly in the recesses of the north.*

*I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High."*

This is why 2Co 10:5-6 says, *We are destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and we are taking every thought captive to the obedience of Christ, and we are ready to punish all disobedience, whenever your obedience is complete.*

It's important to have a positive mental attitude.

A positive mental attitude determines your acceptance of the natural and the spiritual laws designed by God, or your rejection of them. Adopting the right mental attitude can convert a stressful situation into a positive one. Actually, there is little difference in people, but that little difference makes a big

difference, and that difference is mental attitude. The big difference is whether it is positive or negative.

This is why the single most significant decision we can make on a day-to-day basis is our choice of mental attitude. It is more important than our past, our education, our bankroll, or our successes or failures, our fame or pain, what other people think of us or say about us, our circumstances, or our position. Mental attitude either keeps us going in a positive direction or hinders our progress. The longer you live, the more you will realize the impact of your mental attitude toward life.

*Pro 23:26, Give me your heart, my son, And let your eyes delight in my ways.*

*Pro 4:23, Watch over your heart with all diligence, For from it {flow} the springs of life.*

The remarkable thing is we have a choice everyday regarding the mental attitude we will embrace for that day. We cannot change our past. We cannot change the fact that people will act in a certain way. We cannot change the inevitable. However, we can change our mental attitude toward these things. Adam and the woman *forgot* the importance of having a positive mental attitude of gratitude to the Lord for all He had done for them. Developing a mental attitude of gratitude is the ability to give thanks for everything that happens to you, knowing that every step forward is a step toward achieving something bigger and better than your current situation.

So in Rev 12:10, we have man rejecting perfect environment. In the last dispensation of human history, the millennium, the last thousand years, there will again be perfect environment, at the end of that time Satan is released and he is going to find malcontent under perfect environment. Remember, the human race started with perfect environment, and the human race is going to end its history on planet earth with perfect environment, everything that anyone could ever want for happiness and still there will be no happiness.

Happiness has nothing to do with environment

The reason many of you think that certain things would make you happy is because you haven't had them or tried them or you haven't been there yet. You assume that that would make you happy, but if you ever get there, you're going to discover that happiness has nothing whatever to do with environment. The mature believer is happy in time of historical prosperity but he is just as happy in time of historical disaster. Historical circumstances or personal circumstances do not make any difference. You can be happy under the most pleasant circumstances, or the most adverse circumstances, happiness has nothing whatever to do with environment. Rather, happiness has to do with the state of your soul, the amount of doctrine in your soul and the execution of the plan of God.

Happiness has nothing to do with your age.

Some people are old at ninety, some are old at eighty, some seventy, some sixty, some fifty, and some people are old at forty. The difference is in mental attitude. The body is going to age, that's absolutely natural and normal, but getting old is a whole different story. Remember that the Scripture says, as a man thinketh in his heart, so is he. It's all a matter of attitude, you don't have to get old and miserable. It is all a matter of attitude.

So here are some suggestions, that will help you stay young all of your life and enjoy life no matter what your environment.

*Psa 92:12-15, The righteous man will flourish like the palm tree, He will grow like a cedar in Lebanon. Planted in the house of the Lord, They will flourish in the courts of our God.*

*They will still yield fruit in old age; They shall be full of sap and very green, To declare that the Lord is upright; {He is} my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in Him.*

*Psa 103:1-5, {A Psalm} of David.) Bless the Lord, O my soul; And all that is within me, {bless} His holy name. Bless the Lord, O my soul, And forget none of His benefits; Who pardons all your iniquities; Who heals all your diseases; Who redeems your life from the*

*pit; Who crowns you with lovingkindness and compassion; Who satisfies your years with good things, {So that} your youth is renewed like the eagle.*

God desires that you live in happiness in your environment and not get old and run down. Our bodies may age but we can remain young in spirit, young in heart, young in soul, even young in body for the simple reason that He desires to use us all the days of our life. Remember the Bible says that our body is a temple of the Holy Spirit. All of us who are believers, are indwelt by the living God, in the person and the presence of the Holy Spirit. So we have a right to expect God's very best in our life. But we also have the responsibility of being our best, doing our best, and looking our best all the days of our life. This is because we are representatives, ambassadors on this earth of the Son of God, of the Lord Jesus Christ, of almighty God, Himself. So we have a right to expect what He says in Psa 103:5, your youth is renewed like the eagle. We can think, live and act that way so that we don't have to get old unless we choose to do so. It is a matter of mental attitude not environment.

So you say well, how do I stay young all of my life? Well here is some biblical advice and then we'll note some illustrations of this advice. First of all, Keep on learning. You want to stay young all of your life, you've got to keep on learning. There are a lot of people who settle for what they know and they're not interested in learning anything new because it taxes their brain. Not passive learning, but taking the initiative to learn something new. Let's start with what you and I ought to be learning all the time, and that's the word of God. Because the truth is when you and I let God's word enter our hearts, it's going to make an impact on our life.

Look in Proverbs, just a few verses, Pro 4, and listen to what he says, speaking about the word of God in verse 20 and its affect on our life, Pro 4:20, *My son, give attention to my words; Incline your ear to my sayings. Do not let them depart from your sight; Keep them in the midst of your heart. For they that is the word of God, the words of God, are life to those who find them, And health to all their whole body.*

How can reading the Scripture be health to your body? Because when you and I read the Scriptures, we get God's word into our minds and our hearts, we get his thinking into our thinking, we begin to think the way He thinks and see things from His perspective. And when you begin to see things from His perspective you stop worrying about things. It is wise to keep learning, and the first thing we ought to be learning is the word of God. It is a source of strength, it is a source of energy, it is a cleanser, this is where we find out who God is and what He's like. Anyone who understands and begins to understand that God loves them unconditionally, and is able to grasp that truth and make it a part of their thinking and their everyday living is going to stay younger because they are going to walk in the love of God. They will have a sense of assurance and confidence and contentment and quietness in the inner man. Yet there's so many people who are willing to cease learning, they don't want to learn, they are satisfied.

The Scriptures are full of verses that have to do with good health and strength and joy and peace and happiness.

*Pro 17:22, a joyful heart is good medicine, but a broken spirit dries up the bones.*

It also dries up your capacity to love, because if that's your attitude, you're not going to be happy and enjoying life.

There is a relief in laughter

When you laugh, do you realize it affects every cell in your body and that it stimulates your immune system. When you laugh, you become more creative. Remember Ecc 3:4, *there's a time to laugh* You know, we've all got circumstances but when you recognize that a sovereign omnipotent God lives inside of you, He can enable you to smile and to laugh no matter what. The laughter of the mature believer is faith breaking through the barriers of a hopeless situation, and accepting divine reality, as over against human viewpoint, human hopelessness.

There is a relief in laughter and sadly, some have never laughed at themselves. Intense people never laugh at themselves, they take themselves very seriously, too seriously. There are some people who

think that the Christian way of life is no laughing matter, and that God wants us all to be very serious and do great things for Him. Consequently these people usually fall apart at some time and in a hurry. The mature believers attitude toward adversity is expressed in laughter, a relaxed laughter in the midst of great adversity, Job 5:17-22.

Job 5:19-27 is a dissertation on spiritual maturity and the fantastic blessings that come to the mature believer. The problem is that Eliphaz who said this is insinuating that if Job was a mature believer he would have been protected from all that happened.

*Job 5:19, "From six troubles He will deliver you, Even in seven evil will not touch you.*

Six is man's number and it represents all the trouble that man could get himself into. However, Eliphaz makes it 7 which is the perfect number. In verse 20 this marvelous passage continues, *in famine* (economic depression) *He will redeem you from death*, The word redeem is the Hebrew Verb *paddah* which means to buy your life and to guarantee that you will survive economic depression.

*Job 5:20-22, and in war (He will preserve you) from the power of the sword. You will be hidden from the scourge of the tongue which is social disaster, Neither will you be afraid of violence or violent death when it comes. You will laugh at violence and famine or economic depression, neither will you be afraid of wild beasts*

This is not foolish laughing or the phony hysterical laugh of many believers facade, this is the Relaxed Mental Attitude (R.M.A.) of a believer who has a true sense of humor under pressure. A sense of humor is very important in time of disaster, it helps the believer to think! The mature believer is protected in time of economic adversity. In time of economic failure, there is blessing for the mature believer. The laughter of appreciation of who and what God is, the laughter of happiness when there is adversity.

# THE DOCTRINE OF AUTHORITY

Revelation 12:10

09/21/03

*Revelation 12:10* And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the deliverance [*the Second Advent*], and the power [*Jesus Christ in hypostatic union*], and the kingdom of our God [*the Father’s plan for the Millennial reign of our Lord Jesus Christ*] and the authority of His Christ have come...”

The “kingdom of our God” is the Millennial reign and the perfect environment that comes with it. However, as we have seen in past studies, improved environment is not the answer in life, and the mature believer is happy in time of historical prosperity or historical disaster. Historical or personal circumstances make no difference in his viewpoint and attitude. Happiness has to do with the state of your soul, the doctrine in your soul, and the execution of the plan of God, all of which require respect and honor of *authority*.

aWe must have the proper attitude toward authority because all civilization demands the function of authority. If we are to have privacy, freedom, and property, we must respect authority. Under the principles of the word of God, property, privacy, and human life are sacred, but depend on respect for authority.

## The Doctrine of Authority

Point 1: Authority and Human Volition. Authority is defined as the power to command, to judge (discern), or to act by a person or persons in whom authority is vested. Authority applies to certain persons having legal power to make and enforce the law, to make policy, or to make decisions. Under the laws of divine establishment, authority is defined as that legal power, delegated by God, whereby certain persons have jurisdiction over and responsibility for others.

Authority is also an accepted source of information, as in the case of the authority of the pastor-teacher to provide doctrinal information from the scriptures. Authority can also be defined in terms of an expert on a certain subject.

*Heb 13:7,17* Remember those who rule over you, who communicate the Word from God to you; carefully consider the issue of their way of life; imitate their doctrine... Keep obeying those [*pastors*] who themselves are ruling over you, and submit to their authority, for they keep watch over your souls, as those who will render an account. Keep obeying them, in order that they may do this [*render an account*] with happiness and not with groaning, for this is unprofitable for you.

We “remember” pastors by being faithful to their teaching and attending Bible class, by praying for them, and by understanding that they lead an demanding, abnormal life.

All authority in life is divided into two general categories:

1. The temporal realm—the laws of divine establishment. There are four basic concepts of establishment freedom.
  - a. Freedom: the right of self-determination from human volition, apart from violation of law or authority.
  - b. Privacy: the right to hold opinions, make decisions, and engage in actions that do not interfere with the rights of others.
  - c. The sacredness of property and life.
  - d. Enforcement of the law: the guardian of freedom, privacy, property, and life.
2. The spiritual realm—the spiritual laws for the function of a particular dispensation.

Spiritual freedom is the function of the believer while filled with the Holy Spirit inside the predesigned plan of God. This is taught in such passages as Joh 8:32, “*You shall know the truth [Bible doctrine], and the truth shall make you free [spiritually].*”

*Psa 19:45 I will walk in freedom; for I seek your doctrines.*

*Gal 5:1 It is for freedom that Christ has set you free. Keep standing fast, and do not become entangled again in the yoke of slavery [living in the cosmic system]."*

Illegitimate authority is illegal, unlawful authority, usually established by force, and the seizure of power without the lawful right to possess that power. This is authority established by Satan through the function of the cosmic system, such as what he promotes in the Koran and the Islamic religion. Illegitimate authority is delegated by Satan as the ruler of this world in three ways—tyranny, false doctrine, and power struggles.

**Point 2:** The realms of authority. God has delegated authority through His mandates in both the Old and New Testaments, 1Sa 15:22; Jer 11:4,7; Zec 6:15.

*Deu 11:26-27 "See, I am setting before you today a blessing and a curse: the blessing, if you listen to the commandments of the Lord your God, which I am commanding you today."*

There is blessing for respecting and listening to the voice of authority.

God also has authority over nature, and nature obeys Him, Mat 8:27, Mar 4:41, Luk 8:25, Rom 8:20-22. Angels are subject to divine authority, Mar 1:27, 1Pe 3:22. The pastor-teacher and church officers have authority over the congregation in the local church, 1Co 16:15-16; 2Co 10:8; 1Th 5:12; Heb 13:7,17; Isa 54:17. Government has authority over its people to protect the sanctity of their freedom, property, and human life, Rom 13:1-4. The husband has authority over the wife, and this authority provides great happiness. In 1Co 11:10, angels observe the attitude that the woman has toward her husband and the symbol of authority that it represents: *"But I want you to understand that Christ is the head of every man, and the man is the head of a woman, and God is the head of Christ."* A recognition of the authority of Christ means recognition of the authority of the right man. Regardless of the kind of man she is married to, a woman who recognizes the authority of Christ also recognizes the authority of her husband, Eph 5:22, Col 3:18.

In the divine order, God the Father has authority over the Lord Jesus Christ in hypostatic union (the God-Man) during His incarnation. While God the Father is not superior to Christ, as all three members of the Trinity are equal, He has authority over the humanity of Christ. While the man is not superior to the woman, in the divine order, the husband has authority over the wife. We read in 1Co 11:7, *"For a man ought not to have his head covered, since he is the image and glory of God."* The "glory of God" refers to the believer responding to doctrine. The system of perception, metabolization, and application of Bible doctrine and the resultant soul structure are a reflection of the glory of God. The Apostle Paul writes in 1Co 2:7, *"But we speak God's wisdom in a mystery, the hidden wisdom, which God predestined before the ages to our glory."* When man is the glory of God it is because man has built an *edification complex* in the soul. The "image of God" has to do with the characteristics of his soul. Man has self-consciousness; God has self-consciousness. Man has mentality; God has infinite mentality. Man has volition; God has sovereignty. Man has emotion and appreciation; God has appreciation. Man has norms and standards; God has norms and standards.

*"The woman is [keeps on being] the glory of man."* When the right woman is fulfilled by the right man, she reflects the glory of the man. First of all, he fulfills her soul. He fulfills her soul and then her body, and she becomes his glory. She can only be the glory for one man. This "glory" indicates the right woman both as a responder to her right man and as an illustration of God's grace. It is a blessing from God's grace when the right woman responds to her right man, and she reflects perfectly what he is. The woman is to "surround" or walk around her man, Jer 31:22. She is in Gen 2:18 a helper suitable for him: *"Then the Lord God said, 'It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper [ezer, meaning someone to aid, help, and respond to the man] suitable for him.'" The woman was created for the man, and although man is the authority, he is incomplete without his woman. The greatest form of human happiness for a woman is to be fulfilled by her right man, and for a man it is to be completed by his right woman. There is nothing to compare with this happiness outside the spiritual realm.*



The human race fell when the first woman had a conversation with an angel called “Heylel,” or Satan. The antediluvian civilization was destroyed because women rejected the plan of God and became victims of the fallen angels. Therefore, the woman should be under authority for her own protection. That is why the angels are observing how the woman treats her man. The right man and right woman are totally dependent upon each other. However, anything that is designed to be a blessing, when it is out from under the organizational structure that God intended, becomes a curse rather than a blessing.

Parents have authority over their children, Eph 6:1, Col 3:20. Those who are negative toward the authority of their parents become a vessel of dishonor, whether believer or unbeliever, while those who respond begin to shape up as a vessel of honor, as in Rom 9:19-21. Both the Jews (in Exo 20:12) and the Church (in Eph 6:1-2) have been given the command, “*Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be prolonged in the land which the Lord your God gives you.*” Therefore, whether a person becomes a vessel of honor or dishonor depends on the function of their volition regarding, first, the authority of their parents, and later the authority in many other areas of life. The principle of authority is not only delegated, but invented by God as the environment of freedom for the function of human volition. Authority comes before human freedom. The virtue of humility has to be acquired and learned, and it must be done before you step out into the world of freedom. The first responsibility of the child in the home is obedience to the authority and commands of the parents, whether they seem to be reasonable or unreasonable. What a child needs even more than love is discipline and training, Pro 3:12, Pro 13:24, Pro 19:18, Pro 22:15, Pro 23:13.

Authority is the key to freedom, humility, and honor. You cannot have authority without freedom, nor freedom without authority. Freedom without authority is chaos and anarchy; authority without freedom is oppression and tyranny.

Freedom is designed for adults, *not for children*. When children are allowed too much freedom and have no virtue and no respect for the authority of parents, then they become society’s monsters, and society begins to degenerate. In the rearing of the child in the home, freedom is given gradually as trust and virtue builds. The child who does not respond to authority will inevitably come under demon influence. Therefore, children are not commanded to love but to *honor* their parents, and, later in life, respect for authority will develop into love.

Whether the child agrees or not is not the issue. If children, whether believers or unbelievers, are to be protected from demonization and ever learn any virtue, there must be a basic authority for all members of the human race. The home is the system of organized humility, and the parents are the authority designed to provide enforced humility. The parents have the authority for teaching, training, inculcating, and punishing. The child’s volition determines whether he will be a vessel of honor or dishonor. Since virtue is not acquired instantaneously, but with many contacts with authority, the first stage of this virtue is enforced humility. Enforced humility at home eventually will develop into genuine humility in which there is response to the authority of parents, teachers, coaches, etc.

Point 3: Greek words for authority.

1. *Hupakouo* means to obey, or be subject to, Rom 6:16, Eph 6:1, Col 3:20, Mat 8:27, Luk 8:25.
2. *Hupotasso* means to be subordinate to, Rom 8:20, 1Co 14:32, Eph 5:22, Col 3:18. It has the connotation of voluntary submissiveness.
3. *Peitho* means to obey, Gal 5:7, Heb 13:17, Jam 3:3. It has the undertone of obedience.
4. *Peitharcho* means to obey rulers, Tit 3:1.
5. *Kuriotes* indicates authority, Jud 1:8.

Point 4: The role of human volition in accepting authority. Response to authority is a function of human volition. It is something that we either choose to do or not to do. Human freedom provides the option of accepting or rejecting authority in life, both legitimate and illegitimate. While God has delegated legitimate authority in life, these authorities are useless to us if our volition does not accept

them. All legitimate authority in life is delegated by God through two categories of truth—the laws of divine establishment and Bible doctrine. All illegitimate authority in life is based upon the function of man’s arrogance in Satan’s cosmic system.

Arrogance results from the rejection of legitimate authority in life and is the basic mental attitude sin. Satan is the first creature guilty of arrogance. Satan’s motivation of arrogance is found in one line of Isa 14:14, “*I will make myself like the Most High God.*” Arrogance is the antithesis of grace, a total blindness to the grace of God. Arrogance is synonymous with vanity, which is empty pride in regard to one’s person, attainments, or possessions, coupled with an excessive desire to be noticed, a lust for attention, and a lust for approval and praise from others. Arrogance only brings destruction, Pro 11:2, Pro 16:18, Pro 23:29.

Arrogance rejects authority. Anti-authority arrogance begins in the home that emphasizes “love” rather than training. Many children are leaving the home today without any respect for authority. They will suffer under the law of *volitional responsibility*.

Rejection of authority causes people to degenerate, either morally or immorally. Predominant rejection of authority of parents destroys a society. The rejection of the authority of legitimate government is also destructive. Rejection of authority does carry responsibility, and results in a life of misery, unhappiness, disaster, and no human or spiritual self-esteem. Therefore, while God has delegated authority in life to such legitimate categories as government, husbands, parents, teachers, coaches, public officers, judges, and management, this authority is useless apart from human consent.

What makes authority work is human consent, where rational human beings understand the importance of the principle of authority, regardless of whether they like the personality or not. For example, the husband has legitimate authority over his wife. However, his authority is useless unless his wife, from her own free will, recognizes and accepts it. Regardless of whether she is motivated by love or not, she must accept his authority. Personal love does not accept human authority unless the authority agrees with it and does what it wants. Therefore, without impersonal love, the woman resents the authority of the man, and therefore becomes an uncontrollable woman.

While parents have authority in the home, this authority is useless apart from training and discipline, which eventuates in the child accepting the parents’ authority. While young, children must recognize the authority of their parents. As a result, they will develop love and respect for their parents later in life. Legitimate government has authority over its citizens, but that authority is useless apart from human consent. One way in which human consent is expressed in this nation is in voting for someone you believe will do the job as a leader. Therefore, legitimate authority is only effective where human volition responds to it under the principle of freedom. When we choose for legitimate authority, we are blessed both individually and collectively.

# THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB

Revelation 12:11

10/12/03

Our main passage is still Rev 12, and we read in verse 10, *“And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, ‘Now deliverance [the Second Advent], and the power [Jesus Christ in hypostatic union], and the kingdom of our God [the Father’s plan for the Millennial reign of our Lord Jesus Christ] and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.”* Satan will no longer be able to accuse believers in heaven, and this is one of the reasons why we will have perfect environment in the future millennial reign of Christ. One’s environment is greatly improved when his accusers are removed. We are warned against the sins of the tongue in Psa 12:2; Jam 4:11, 5:9.

In Rev 12:10, the word “accuser” is *kategor*, meaning accuser, betrayer, or prosecuting attorney. Satan is accusing and prosecuting the “brethren,” the *adelphon*, which today refers to the Royal Family of God. This prosecution will continue until Satan is cast out of heaven in the middle of the Tribulation. The Greek verb for “accuses” is *kategoroo*, which means to make accusations, charge with offenses, or speak against someone. The *progressive present tense* indicates an action in a state of persistence, which means that Satan will do this constantly until he is thrown out of heaven. During the entire Church-age, every time court convenes in heaven, Satan is there with a “sin portfolio” on individual believers. The Greek word for “thrown down” is *ballo*, which means to be hurled like a ball out of heaven. Satan the slanderer will no longer be allowed to accuse believers in the court of heaven, and this begins the eschatology of the devil’s desperation; he is forced to live upon the earth during the last half of the Tribulation. While the Devil *persecutes* believers on earth, he *prosecutes* believers in heaven. There will be persecution for those who desire to live the spiritual life, 2Co 11:23-28.

After salvation, the believer continues to use his volition to commit sin according to 1Jo 1:8-10. We fail and sin as believers, and Satan has his own system of evangelism, whereby he gets us to enter *cosmic one* (our arrogance, pride, jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, hatred, self-pity, and guilt complex) and *cosmic two* (judging, legalism, and self-righteousness).

Several cases of satanic prosecution are recorded in the word of God. Satan went to the court of heaven to accuse Job, Job 1:6-7, *“Now there was a day when the sons of God [angels] came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. And the Lord said to Satan, ‘From where do you come?’ Then Satan answered the Lord and said, ‘From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it.’”* At the beginning of the courtroom session, Satan wants to make it clear that while God had put Adam in charge of the world as its ruler, Satan had recovered it. Planet earth was his headquarters long before any human beings existed. When Satan and the fallen angels were sentenced to the lake of fire, God shut down Satan’s headquarters, the earth, Gen 1:1-2, Jer 4:23-26. Man’s residence on earth did not last long before Adam and the woman fell, and Satan became the ruler of the world once again, and it is not surprising to find several accounts of Satan bragging about his presence on the earth, his kingdom. In Job 1:8, Job is called as a witness for God in the historic appeal trial of Satan and the fallen angels: *“And the Lord said to Satan, [‘since you have been roaming about on the earth] Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil.’”* He is not sinless, but he is free from evil.

Job 1:9-10 continues, *“Then Satan answered the Lord, ‘Does Job fear God for nothing? Have You not made a hedge about him and his house and all that he has, on every side?’”* Satan claims that Job trusts God only because God has blessed him and prospered him. In verse 11, we see Satan’s contention: *“But put forth Thy hand now and touch all that he has; he will surely curse Thee to Thy face.”* In verse 12, Satan’s motion is granted: *“Then the Lord said to Satan, ‘Behold, all that he has is in*

your power, only do not put forth your hand on him.' So Satan departed from the presence of the Lord."

In Zec 3:1-2, we find Satan prosecuting Joshua the High Priest. God was about to reestablish the priesthood in Israel, and Satan objected because of the sins that were found among the priests. He objected on the basis that they were unworthy of the honor about to be bestowed upon them (as if Satan had been worthy of the honor God had given him). When we go astray in any area, Satan will be sure to aggravate it and make the worst of it. Satan stood to accuse Joshua and oppose his service in the plan of God. Satan stood at his right hand, the hand of action, to discourage him, and raise up obstacles in his way. Whenever we stand before God to serve His interests, we should expect all the resistance that Satan's subtlety and malice can throw at us. Jam 4:7 says, "*Submit therefore to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.*"

The Lord defends Joshua in Zec 3:2, "And the Lord said to Satan, "The Lord rebuke you, Satan! Indeed, the Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?" The One to whom Satan brings his accusations is our advocate and protector. God foresaw all His people's failures, yet He still chose them, and He will not reject them now. At one time or another all believers have been burnt by the fires of the cosmic system, but they are to be excused, not accused. This is God's attitude toward the believer who understands Luk 18:13 "God, be merciful to me, the sinner!" Once God forgives our sins, they can never condemn us, Col 1:22; Eph 1:4, 5:27. The Lord addresses Joshua in Zec 3:4, "See, I have taken your iniquity away from you and will clothe you with festal robes." He not only has the shame of his filthiness removed, but the shame of his nakedness covered.

When Satan makes accusations against the people of God, the Lord Jesus Christ, their Defense Attorney, is standing by. Whether you know it or not, the moment you accepted Christ as Savior, you retained the services of the greatest lawyer on retainer of all time, our Lord Jesus Christ, and He represents you personally in the court of heaven, 1Jo 2:1, "*My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.*" The basis for our defense is given in the next verse, 1Jo 2:2, "*And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world.*" The basis for our Lord's defense is a very simple one. All our personal sins were never imputed to us for judgment; only Adam's sin was. Our personal sins were reserved for the Cross and imputed to Christ. Our sins were all judged on the Cross, and therefore when we simply believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, we have eternal salvation at that moment. Why? Because our Lord said one word, *tetelestai*, translated "*It is finished!*" Salvation was finished on the Cross, therefore faith is non-meritorious and no system of deeds will ever attain salvation for anyone, Tit 3:5.

When believers simply name and confess their sins, God is faithful and just to forgive our sins, and cleanse us from all unrighteousness, restoring us to fellowship with Him, because all those sins were already taken to court at the Cross and judged, 2Co 5:21. Under the law of double jeopardy, our sins cannot be retried in heaven, Rom 6:10. Therefore, when Satan accuses us, God the Father, as the Judge, says, "Case dismissed." Satan is thrown out of court, and your sins and failures become a *family matter* for discipline, rather than a legal matter.

#### The Doctrine of Advocacy

Point 1: The believer continues to sin after salvation, 1Jo 1:8,10.

Point 2: Satan builds a sin file (with information gathered by his demons) on every believer and periodically accuses the believer in heaven, Job 1:6-11, Zec 3:1-2, Rev 12:9-10.

Point 3: Jesus Christ is retained as the believer's Defense Attorney in the court of heaven, and He defends every case. In certain cases, an apostate believer is turned over to Satan for the administration of the *sin unto death*.

Point 4: The basis for our Lord's defense is the fact that all our sins were judged at the Cross in Him by God the Father, 2Co 5:21, 1Pe 2:24.

Point 5: Under the law of double jeopardy, sins cannot be judged again, Rom 6:10.

Point 6: Every case presented by Satan is thrown out of court by God the Father, Zec 3:1-2.

Point 7: The sins of the believer then become, not a court matter, but a family matter for the imputation of divine discipline, Heb 12:6.

Point 8: An advocate is one who undertakes the cause of another. In its Biblical meaning, advocacy represents divine enablement and assistance. The New Testament word for advocate is *parakletos*, Joh 14:16,26, 15:26, 16:17.

Point 9: Two persons of the Trinity are recognized as advocates—the Son and the Spirit. Christ in His earthly ministry was an advocate for His people in the world, and before He left, He promised another "Helper" would come. By the use of the word "another," Christ implied that His own ministry on earth had been that of an advocate, Joh 14:16.

Point 10: As a legal representative in the court of heaven, Christ now functions as the believer's advocate, 1Jo 2:1. The advocacy of Christ in heaven regarding the believer's sin is so complete and perfect that He holds the title "Jesus Christ the Righteous."

Point 11: The advocacy of the Spirit is one of intercession and direct aid, Rom 8:26-27.

Point 12: There are three general uses of the word advocate, (1) a *legal advocate*, which Christ is now in heaven, (2) an *intercession agent*, which Christ and the Spirit are now, and (3) a *helper*, which Christ was on earth and which the Spirit is throughout the Church-age.

This study now brings us to the triumph of the Tribulational believer who will be under double persecution, since Satan is cast out of heaven and knows he has only a short time left. We read in Rev 12:12, *"For this reason [because the devil is cast out of heaven], rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time."* He will never return to heaven again. At the Second Advent, he will be thrown into the abyss, and then after 1,000 years he will return to the surface of the earth for the Gog Revolution and then be cast into the lake of fire forever, Rev 20:10.

No matter how intense the persecution for the Tribulational believer, there will be many winners against Satan, demonstrating once again that even in the worst of historical disasters, people can make decisions from a position of strength, and find great happiness. The basis for victory over Satan during the time of his desperation is presented by three principles in Rev 12:11.

1. The decision to believe in Christ for eternal salvation: *"And they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb..."*
2. The decisions from a position of strength after salvation through perception and application of doctrine: *"Because of the word of their testimony..."*
3. The personal sense of destiny, which makes doctrine more important than life itself: *"And they did not love their life even to death."*

1. The blood, which dealt with their sin (Phase 1, salvation).
  2. The Word of God (Phase 2, executing the plan of God).
  3. The fact that they "did not love their life" (persecution and pressure, which jeopardizes their life, and brings them face-to-face with the reality of death).
1. The first has to do with eternal salvation and the doctrines related to Soteriology, indicated by the phrase *"the blood of the lamb."*
  2. Secondly, there is the application of Bible doctrine to experience.
  3. Thirdly, they had absolutely no fear of death and lived therefore in light of eternal values rather than temporal.

So many are afraid of death, yet, apart from the Rapture of the Church, death is inevitable. Life and death are dealt with in exactly the same way—the application of doctrine to the situations of life,

as well as the situations of death. In Rev 21:4, once death occurs, *“He shall wipe away every tear from their eyes; and there shall no longer be any death; there shall no longer be any mourning, or crying, or pain; the first things have passed away.”* The two go together; living and dying are a part of the same package in Rev 12:11. The blessings for mature believers are given in time of historical adversity as well as in prosperity. We do not have to live in a prosperous period in order to have these blessings, and the greatness of the positive believer in historical disaster is the subject of verse 11. This is a fulfillment of the promises of God in Isa 43:1.

First of all, we see the tremendous victory of regeneration. The first great decision we make in this life with regard to anything spiritual is the decision to personally believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. The opening phrase in Rev 12:11 should be translated, *“Furthermore, they overcame him...”* The verb for “overcame” is the Greek verb *enikesan* and means to overcome and win a victory. The decision that begins our relationship with God in time, and continues that relationship forever, is the moment of faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. Perhaps even millions of people are personally going to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ at this time. Our verse continues, *“Furthermore, they [believers in the Lord Jesus Christ] overcame him through the blood of the lamb...”* Here we have the preposition *dia* (“through”) plus the noun *haima* (“blood”) plus the noun *arniou*, translated “lamb,” one of the titles for our Lord Jesus Christ in His saving work. There are two concepts of the blood of our Lord on the Cross—His *physical death* and *spiritual death*. There are figurative and literal uses of the “blood of Christ” on the Cross. It must be determined whether we have the literal or spiritual blood of Christ here, since *haima* is used both ways.

#### The Blood of Christ

Eph 1:7 tells us what our Lord’s blood accomplished: *“In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of His grace.”* The literal blood of Christ was pure because His blood was without an old sin nature as a result of the virgin birth. However, what gives His blood value is *not* something mystical or magical about it, but the fact that from His own volition He chose not to sin, and remained *impeccable*. This is why Isa 53:10 says, *“He offered up His soul an offering for sin.”* Therefore, the phrase the “blood of Christ” actually speaks of three aspects of Christ’s *saving work* on the Cross— (1) propitiation (He satisfied God the Father, Rom 3:25), (2) redemption (God the Father imputed our sins to Him, and He solved the sin problem, Eph 1:7, Col 1:14), and (3) reconciliation (the barrier between God and man is removed—the door of the slave market is now open, Col 1:20). When our Lord’s body was nailed to the Cross, He did lose some of His blood, as He bled from His hands and feet, Psa 22:16, *“They pierced my hands and my feet.”* He did not, however, “bleed to death”! When His blood is mentioned in scripture, it refers to the saving work of the Lord Jesus Christ.

In order to understand what is meant by the blood, we must go back to the Old Testament and look at the blood of animals in passages such as Lev 17:10, *“And any man from the house of Israel, or from the aliens who sojourn among them, who eats any blood, I will set My face against that person who eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people.”* The eating or drinking of blood is strictly paganistic and forbidden. Lev 17:11 goes on to say, *“For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood by reason of the life that makes atonement.”* This is a reference to animal flesh; the context is the prohibition of eating the animal sacrifices and their blood. We are a higher order of creature than animals; we have a human soul, and human life was imputed to that soul, *not to our blood*. When the *soul* leaves the body, physical death takes place; the blood remains in the body. It does not disappear or vanish into heaven. Why? Because it is the human soul and human spirit (the real person) that depart; of course, this is not true of animals. The animal’s life is said to be “in the blood.” In the Old Testament, they did not put an animal on the altar and for three hours leave it in darkness so it could go through spiritual death, like the Lord on the Cross. The sacrificial lamb simply *portrayed* the future Cross.

The life of the flesh, which God gave to Israel on the altar, was to *represent* the work of our Lord Jesus Christ. Through the shedding of blood, the Gospel was presented before Christ came. This is the theme throughout the Bible.

1. In Gen 4, there is the account of Abel and his lamb, and emphasis is placed upon the necessity of the Lamb.
2. In Gen 22, there is the incident in which Abraham offers the lamb in place of Isaac.
3. In Exo 12, there is the Passover lamb, which was slain on the night before the Exodus, which is the Jewish "Fourth of July," when they were freed from Egypt.
4. Lev 16 is the fourth passage concerning the lamb. The book of *Leviticus* is filled with instructions for the sacrifices. The emphasis is always upon the character of the lamb.
5. In Isa 53:6-8, we see a major step forward in the developing revelation of the lamb. It is now written that the lamb God would send would be a Person!
6. In Joh 1:29, the lamb is not only a person, but He is now identified as the Lord Jesus Christ! The emphasis in this passage is upon the Lamb completely removing our sins from us.
7. In Acts 8, Philip explained to the Ethiopian that the Lamb of God is the Lord Jesus Christ, the promised Christ, the Son of God.
8. 1Pe 1:18-21 describes the resurrection of the slain lamb, which was never disclosed in Old Testament times. That the lamb should die was foretold again and again, but nowhere was His resurrection predicted! Therefore, the emphasis is placed upon redemption through the lamb.
9. In Rev 5, the lamb is now on the throne of heaven, the very throne of the universe. The lamb now sits in sovereign control over history as "*the lamb in the midst of the throne.*"
10. Finally, in Rev 21:22, what a climax of never-ending glory is portrayed! In the last two chapters of the New Testament, the final picture of the Lamb is that of His everlasting kingship. The Lamb sits in the very throne of God which is called "*the throne of God and of the Lamb.*"

Abel reveals the *necessity* of the lamb, Abraham reveals the *provision* of the lamb, *Leviticus* reveals the *character* of the lamb, the Exodus reveals the *slaying* of the lamb, and Isa 53 reveals the lamb would be a *Person*. In Joh 1 we have the *identification* of the lamb, Acts 8 gives us the *Christ-hood* of the lamb, 1Pe 1 reveals the *resurrection* of the lamb, Rev 5 reveals the *enthronement* of the lamb, and Rev 21 reveals the *endless kingship* of the lamb.

# THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB, PART 2

Leviticus 1  
10/19/03

*Revelation 12:11 Furthermore, they overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb and because of the word of their testimony, and they did not love their life even to death.*

There are three ways in which believers in the Tribulation will achieve victory over the devil and the kingdom of darkness:

1. The blood dealt with their sin (faith in Christ for eternal salvation).
2. The Word of God dealt with living the spiritual life (perception and application of doctrine).
3. They did not love their life because they lived in light of eternity with eternal values rather than temporal (personal sense of destiny).

The first great decision we make in this life with regard to anything spiritual is the decision to personally believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. We are now studying the phrase, *"Furthermore, they overcame him because of the blood of the lamb."* The blood of the lamb is a reference to the saving work of our Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross, not His literal blood.

There are two concepts of the blood of our Lord on the Cross, His physical death and His spiritual death. There is a literal and a figurative use of the "blood of Christ" on the Cross. In both cases it has great significance, for when our Lord was on the Cross, He died twice (spiritually and physically), Isa 53:9. The literal blood of Christ was without the old sin nature as a result of the virgin birth, but what gives His blood value is not something mystical or magical, but His own volitional decisions to not sin. The fact that the Lord Jesus Christ was nailed to the Cross meant He bled from His hands and from His feet; He did not, however, "bleed to death!" His literal, physical blood did not save us. Therefore, the phrase the "blood of Christ" speaks of the doctrines of His saving work.

Throughout the New Testament there are very important doctrines described by the phrase "the blood of Christ." The doctrine of *redemption* emphasizes the fact that we are sinners, not only by choice or volition, but also at the point of birth. We had to be condemned before we could be saved. Redemption is viewed from the standpoint of a ransom paid on the Cross for our salvation. Redemption views mankind as born into the slave market of sin through the imputation of Adam's original sin at birth. It is the saving work of Christ on the Cross by which He purchased our freedom, our salvation. The "coin of the realm" for this purchase is called the "blood of Christ," Eph 1:7, 1Pe 1:18-19.

The doctrine of *propitiation* is the God-ward side of the work of Christ in salvation. God the Father is satisfied with the sacrificial ministry of our Lord on the Cross. Propitiation is the work of Christ on the Cross that deals with the integrity of God. Our Lord satisfied the righteous and holy demands of God the Father concerning the human race, Rom 3:23-25.

Under the doctrine of *reconciliation*, all believers are reconciled to God the moment they believe in Christ, but the work of reconciliation actually took place on the Cross through the blood of Christ, Col 1:19-20, *"For it was the Father's good pleasure for all the fulness to dwell in Him, and through Him to reconcile all things to Himself, having made peace through the blood of His Cross; through Him, I say, whether things on earth or things in heaven."* This time it is called the "blood of His Cross." The Cross obviously did not bleed; this is simply a technical phrase referring to the efficacious work of Christ on the Cross.

*Justification* means an act of vindication, Rom 5:8-9. This is a judicial act of vindication, because we are born under condemnation, being spiritually dead. The justice of God acts on our behalf, pronouncing us justified, which means having a relationship with God forever, having the perfect righteousness of God imputed to us. God recognizes His perfect righteousness in us.



Many believers do not understand the spiritual death of our Lord Jesus Christ; they assume He died physically for them, when in reality He had accomplished our salvation *before* He died physically, Joh 19:28, “*After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had already been accomplished, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, ‘I am thirsty.’*” The work of salvation had already been accomplished and He was still alive physically. Joh 19:29-30 goes on, “*A jar full of sour wine was standing there; so they put a sponge full of the sour wine upon a branch of hyssop, and brought it up to His mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the sour wine, He said, ‘It is finished!’ And He bowed His head, and gave up His spirit.*” After being judged for our sins, He spoke one word, *tetelestai*, which translated in the dramatic perfect tense, means “*it has been finished in the past,*” with the result that it stands finished forever. He had not bled to death; He was still alive after He was judged for the sins of the whole world. There is no magical or mystical element in the blood. The idea of some mystery about the blood is a superstition, a religion, and an insult to our Lord and Savior, because it ignores His work and His Person. If all that God required was the shedding of innocent blood, then Herod could have killed baby Jesus immediately after His birth.

Moses wrote in Lev 17:10-11, “*And any man from the house of Israel, or from the aliens who sojourn among them, who eats any blood, I will set My face against that person who eats blood, and will cut him off from among his people. [The eating or drinking of blood is strictly paganistic and it is forbidden.] For the life of the flesh [the animal] is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood [the animal blood] by reason of the life that makes atonement [a temporal covering for sin until the Cross].*” Animal blood is not the basis for salvation, but represents what Christ would accomplish on the Cross. Eating animal blood carried the most severe penalty, because the animal’s life resides in his blood, while human life resides in the human soul. This was a very strict prohibition because the analogy had to be maintained. Since the animal dies by the shedding of blood, such a ritual portrays the spiritual death of Christ on the Cross, providing our so-great salvation.

In Lev 17:11, “atonement” means a propitiatory covering of blood. To teach propitiation, the blood of the animal was taken into the Holy of Holies, which contained the mercy seat, a solid gold throne. On each side of the throne was a cherub, one representing the righteousness of God, the other His justice; together they represented the holiness of God. Once a year, on the Day of Atonement, the high priest would slay a lamb without defect on the altar. The altar was outside, since Christ would be crucified outside the gate. The animal’s blood was caught in a basin, and the high priest would carry it into the Holy of Holies; no one else could enter the Holy of Holies. Under the mercy throne was the Ark of the Covenant, a box made of acacia wood, which represented the humanity of Christ and gold-plated to represent the deity of Christ. The Ark as a whole represented Christ in Hypostatic Union. There were three items kept in the Ark:

1. Aaron’s rod that budded, which represented sin as rejection of divinely-appointed human authority.
2. The tables of the Law, which represented personal sins in rejection of human freedom.
3. A pot of manna, which represented sin in the sense of rejection of divine logistical provision.

The high priest would sprinkle the blood of the lamb over the top of the mercy seat. The righteousness of God the Father looks down and is satisfied with the work of Christ as portrayed by the blood of the sacrificial lamb. The satisfaction of divine justice includes propitiation, expiation, and atonement, meaning the blood covered the sins of the people. In this representative analogy, the physical death of the animal on the altar portrays the spiritual death of Christ on the Cross. Since the animal dies by the shedding of its blood, the ritual portrays the spiritual death of Christ, providing eternal salvation through redemption toward sin, reconciliation toward man, propitiation toward God, and justification toward perfect righteousness. When Christ had finished His saving work on the

Cross, He was still physically alive, but when the animal finished its “work” on the altar, it was physically dead, so the physical death of Christ cannot be part of the analogy.

Lev 17:13 continues, “So when any man from the sons of Israel, or from the aliens who sojourn among them, in hunting catches a beast or a bird which may be eaten, he shall pour out its blood and cover it with earth.” Before they could eat the body, they had to bury the animal’s blood. The life of the animal is in its blood; the life of man is in his soul. The shedding of animal blood on the altar was the shadow and analogy to the spiritual death of Christ on the Cross as our substitute, Lev 17:14, “Because the life of every animal is in its blood. That is why I said to the Israelites, ‘You must not eat the blood of any animal, because the life of every animal is in its blood. Whoever eats it will be cut off.’” Therefore, the blood of Christ is what we call a representative analogy:

- Eph 1:7 In Him we have redemption through His blood.
- Heb 9:12-14 We have a cleansed conscience through His blood.
- Rev 1:5b ...Him who loves us, and released us from our sins by His blood...
- Rom 5:9 Much more then, having now been justified by His blood...
- Heb 13:12 ...Sanctified through His blood.

The shedding of animal blood illustrated the future salvation work of the coming Savior, beginning with the very first presentation of the Gospel, immediately after the fall of man, Gen 3:21, “*And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them,*” and continuing through the offerings of Abel, Gen 4:4, “*And Abel, on his part also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of their fat portions. And the Lord had regard for Abel and for his offering.*” We see it again with Noah in Gen 8:20 and Abraham in Gen 22:13.

So why was all this blood necessary? If God was not propitiated by these animal sacrifices, why did He institute such a gruesome, bloody system of ritual? The answer is that God in His awesome glory can never compromise any attribute of His character. The one quality of His essence that guards all His other attributes is His justice. Everything that God does must be just in every detail, according to His perfect standards. Man’s sinfulness is a maladjustment to divine justice, and divine justice demands that justice be done concerning mankind. The violence and bloodshed involved in the Levitical offerings were meant to shock the observers into recognizing the reality of God’s immovable character. The death and struggle of the innocent animal broke away from all sweetness and sentimentality and cast a strong light on the absolute standards of God.

When the Bible mentions the blood of Christ, the purpose is to relate the Cross to the animal sacrifices. In the Old Testament, *the blood was literal and the judgment was symbolic*, but, on the Cross, *the blood was symbolic and the judgment was literal*. The Levitical offerings utilized animals to depict the unique Person of Jesus Christ. The animal on the altar represented Christ on the Cross. However, the *physical* death of the animal portrayed the *spiritual* death of the Lord Jesus Christ. In physical death, there is the shedding of blood; in spiritual death, there is no shedding of blood.

In Lev 1:1-9, “The Lord called to Moses and spoke to him from the tent of meeting, saying, ‘Speak to the sons of Israel and say to them, ‘When any man of you brings an offering to the Lord, you shall bring your offering of animals from the herd or the flock. If his offering is a burnt offering from the herd, he shall offer it, a male without defect; he shall offer it at the doorway of the tent of meeting, that he may be accepted before the Lord. And he shall lay his hand on the head of the burnt offering, that it may be accepted for him to make atonement on his behalf. And he shall slay the young bull before the Lord; and Aaron’s sons, the priests, shall offer up the blood and sprinkle the blood around on the altar that is at the doorway of the tent of meeting. He shall then skin the burnt offering and cut it into its pieces. And the sons of Aaron the priest shall put fire on the altar and arrange wood on the fire. Then Aaron’s sons, the priests, shall arrange the pieces, the head, and the suet over the wood which is on the fire that is on the altar. Its entrails, however, and its legs he shall wash with water.

And the priest shall offer up in smoke all of it on the altar for a burnt offering, an offering by fire of a soothing aroma to the Lord.”

In verse 3, the bull had to be *“a male without defect or blemish.”* This illustrated the perfection and *impeccability* of our Lord Jesus Christ. In verse 4, the transfer of sins from the sinner to the sinless animal was performed symbolically in the ritual of laying the hand on the bull’s head, and the burnt offering was graciously received by God. This portrayed God the Father accepting the work of God the Son on the Cross. As the young healthy bull was tied to the altar, he would be identified with the offerer’s sins. Then the priest would cut his throat, causing the powerful, struggling beast to pump out blood, which soon covered the offerer, the priest, the altar, and the ground. This was a graphic method of teaching the Jews the spiritual death of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Heb 9:22 states that *“Without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins.”* As the ceremony continued, it pointed to the purity of the Lord Jesus Christ and the judgment of our sins in Him. The “head” referred to the mental purity of the Lord Jesus Christ; He never had one mental attitude sin. He was without sin, for all sin originates in the head, in one’s thoughts. The “suet,” or fat, represented overt prosperity in the ancient world, and therefore the outer purity and overt righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ. Together they pointed to His complete qualification to become the Redeemer, and therefore the doctrine of redemption. The “entrails” represent the internal organs of the body, such as the heart, lungs, liver, kidneys, and intestines. They were also to be burned, but first they were washed in water brought from the brazen laver, because Christ suffered a spiritual death inwardly before His physical death. The “water” represented the principle of *sanctification*; Aaron and his sons were told to wash their hands and feet in the water from the basin, Exo 30:19. Isaiah tells us in Isa 52:11 that all who bear the vessels of the Lord must be clean.

The New Testament commentary and application of this principle is found in Eph 5:18,26. Symbolically this part of the ceremony taught that confession of sin and cleansing must always precede service, as in Heb 10:22, *“Let us draw near with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water.”* This is a perfect illustration of spirituality in the Church-age. The “entrails” in verse 9 represent our inner life and have to do with Eph 5:18, being filled with the Spirit. The “legs” in verse 9 remind us of our walk in the spirit, Gal 5:16. In our dispensation, the instructions for cleanliness are given in 1Jo 1:9. Out of the fire of judgment, the smoke was a “sweet smell” to God. In Eph 5:2 we read, *“Walk in love, just as Christ also loved you, and gave Himself up for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God as a fragrant aroma.”* Again, this indicates God’s satisfaction with the work of His Son. Throughout the New Testament, we have different phrases that *symbolically* point back to the Levitical offerings, such as Joh 1:29, *“Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!”*; and 1Pe 1:18-19, *“Knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile way of life inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood, as of a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ.”* The Lord Jesus Christ was obviously not a literal lamb as described above in Lev 1:3, and we are not literally sprinkled with the blood in Lev 1:5. However, Heb 10:22 says we are to have our hearts “sprinkled clean from an evil conscience.” In Lev 1:9, the offering was made by fire, but our Lord was not burned on the Cross. These are all symbolic *types* of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Lev 1:10 refers to the sheep as the perfect sinless humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the goat emphasized the sins to be born by Him on the Cross: *“But if his offering is from the flock, of the sheep or of the goats, for a burnt offering, he shall offer it a male without defect.”* The sheep or goat of the flock portrayed our Lord as the qualified sin bearer, as in Joh 1:29, *“The next day he [John the Baptist] saw Jesus coming to him, and said, ‘Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!’”*

Most Jews in Moses’ time were illiterate because they had been in slavery for 400 years under the Egyptians, and they had to learn through repeated ritual. These rituals, which pointed to the

coming reality of their Messiah, evangelized Jewish unbelievers and taught believers the grace of God. They needed to understand the significance and meaning of the rituals they were performing, and they had to do it from their own free will. Ritual without understanding the reality is meaningless.

Our Lord's innocence as well as His excruciating pain, which was more intense than anything that we can ever begin to imagine, was dramatized in the violent deaths of these valuable, innocent, flawless animals. No Jewish believer could forget these gruesome scenes that were repeated time and time again. The shedding of animal blood, both in the detail of the ceremony and in the shock of the execution, was designed to permanently imprint Bible doctrine on the souls of the offerers and the observers.

Continuing in Lev 1:11, we see the Hebrew word *shachat*, which means to slaughter: "And he shall slay [slaughter] it on the side of the altar northward before the LORD, and Aaron's sons, the priests, shall sprinkle its blood around on the altar." The slaughter would be performed by cutting the animal's throat. The offerer was to put his hand on the head of the animal just as in the bullock offering, representing the transfer of sin. The phrase "northward before the Lord" is a reference to the side of judgment as taught in the scriptures, Isa 14:13,31; Jer 51:48. (At other times the sacrifice was presented on all sides of the altar, proclaiming that the Lord's sacrifice was for all.) The offerer, not the priest, slaughtered the animal because, before divine love can provide eternal life for mankind, divine holiness must be satisfied. Before one can pass the point of propitiation, he must receive the Savior. This requires a personal decision, therefore the priest handed the sacrificial knife to the offerer, who was required to personally cut the animal's throat.

The crucifixion was a shocking sacrifice. It was not designed to be pleasant. If all the Lord Jesus Christ had to do was bleed to death, it would have been far easier for Him. The horrible pain and suffering that the Lord Jesus Christ endured when He was personally judged for our sins is beyond our understanding. During those last three hours on the Cross, He went through the most awesome, intense agony and suffering. For the first time, holiness contacted sin. For the first time, the Father forsook the Son. The wrath of God the Father that all of us would have experienced was unleashed on Him. God could have spared His own Son, but He did not. He gave Him up for us all. This is the grace that appeared to all men, Tit 2:11, *"For the grace of God has appeared, bringing salvation to all men."* God has never given us what we deserve. *"He has not dealt with us according to our sins, nor rewarded us according to our iniquities."*

## THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB, PART 3

John 19:30  
10/26/03

*John 19:28 After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had already been accomplished, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, "I am thirsty."*

The Lord Jesus Christ loved the Scriptures, and His life in His humanity centered around them. The first great lesson from this verse is the infinite value of the Word of God. The thirst of Jesus points to His humanity, for deity does not get thirsty. It focuses our attention on His humanity because deity could not suffer the penalty of sin. This utterance of the Savior, "I thirst," immediately followed the three hours of darkness, during which the light of God's countenance had been withdrawn from the Sin-Bearer. This cry reveals the intensity of what He had suffered, the awful severity of the conflict through which He had just passed in His spiritual death.

Even though His sufferings were like no other, it was not desire for the relief of His body that caused Him to say this. He who turned the water into wine by a word from His lips could have spoken the same word of power here, and instantly met His own need. But in the Scriptures, the written expression of the will of God, it was written that He should thirst! He came here to do God's will, and He performed it perfectly. The terrible thirst of the crucifixion was upon Him, but that is not what forced His parched lips to speak; what was written in the Book is what caused Him to speak, *Psa 69:21, "They also gave me gall for my food, and for my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink."* Here again, He shows Himself in active obedience to the will of God, which He came to accomplish. His mind was perfectly clear and His memory entirely unimpaired, still remembering the entire scope of the Messianic prophecies. This capacity to be self-denying for the sake of others should be sought after by all believers.

The one who said *Joh 7:37, "If any man is thirsty, let him come to Me and drink,"* was Himself thirsty. Thirst represents the result of sin, *Luk 16:24*. If the Lord had not thirsted for us, every one of us would have an eternal thirst, forever separated from God. In *Joh 19:29-30, "A jar full of sour wine was standing there; so they put a sponge full of the sour wine upon a branch of hyssop, and brought it up to His mouth. When Jesus therefore had received the sour wine, He said, 'It is finished!' And He bowed His head, and gave up His spirit."* When the Lord Jesus Christ uttered the words "*It is finished*," He declared that salvation was complete. Nothing could be taken away from it, and above all, nothing could be added to it. It was purely a matter of *grace*.

"*It is finished*" is a single word in the original Greek—*Tetelestai*—yet it will take all of eternity to make manifest all that it contains. All things had been done which the law of God required, which prophecy predicted, which the types foreshadowed, which the Father had given Him to do—all things needed for our redemption—and nothing was left undone. The costly ransom had been fulfilled, the great conflict endured, sin's wages paid, and divine justice satisfied. Our Lord's cry of "*It is finished*" was neither the despairing cry of a helpless martyr nor an expression of satisfaction that the end of His sufferings had been reached. It was the declaration on the part of the Divine Redeemer that all for which He came from heaven to earth to do, was now done. All which was needful to reveal the glorious character of God had now been accomplished.

After the Lord Jesus Christ paid the penalty for sins, He announced that salvation was finished. Then He bowed his head and gave up His life. Our Lord was still speaking *after salvation was accomplished*. Obviously He could not have spoken if He were physically dead! His physical death could have nothing to do with the payment for sin.

In *Joh 19:31* we read, "The Jews therefore, because it was the day of preparation, so that the bodies should not remain on the Cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a high day), asked Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away." The religious Jews were very

particular about the superficialities of life, while ignoring matters of eternal importance. They had just demanded and secured the execution of the only perfect man who ever lived, their own Messiah. Now, in their hypocrisy, they are concerned about a body hanging on the Cross during the Sabbath. It was the Roman custom to leave a body nailed to the Cross until the flesh rotted away. However, Jewish Law required that the body of any criminal be put out of the sight during a Sabbath or feast day in order to not pollute the land, Deu 21:22-23. So in Joh 19:32, "The soldiers therefore came, and broke the legs of the first man, and of the other man who was crucified with Him." The soldiers pounded their legs until their bones were crushed, and when they no longer had the support of their legs, they could not breathe, and would then suffocate. Verse 33 continues, "But coming to Jesus, when they saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs." This is a fulfillment of specific Old Testament promises; concerning the Passover lamb we read in Exo 12:46, Num 9:12, Psa 34:20. We read in Joh 19:35, "And he who has seen has borne witness, and his witness is true; and he knows that he is telling the truth, so that you also may believe. For these things came to pass, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, 'Not a bone of Him shall be broken.' And again another Scripture says, 'They shall look on Him whom they pierced.'"

God keeps His Word to you and me today just as He did throughout all the generations leading up to the Cross. In Passover after Passover, through nearly fifteen centuries, the Jews had carefully prepared the Passover lamb in such a way as never to break even one of its bones. Every time they went through the ritual, they were saying in effect, "What God says is true." God keeps His Word. In the aftermath of the crucifixion, God's character was on the line. God always honors His Word, and therefore Bible doctrine in your soul is your source of your confidence and security. Therefore, we read concerning the mature believers of the Tribulation in Rev 12:11, "And they overcame him cause of the blood of the Lamb and because of the doctrine applied by means of their testimony."

The Lord Jesus Christ anticipated that Satan would attack the Cross by perverting the true meaning of the blood of Christ, in an attempt to obscure the importance of His spiritual death. While still on the Cross, our Lord provided proof that He did not "bleed to death," and unlike that of the sacrificial animal, it is not His literal blood that has spiritual significance, but His *finished work*. Our Lord's words demonstrated for all to see and for John to record that He did not die from loss of blood. In Joh 19:34, "*One of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately there came out blood and water.*" When the soldier's javelin penetrated our Lord's chest, without breaking any bones, immediately "blood and water" gushed forth. If the blood was inside the body, turning into clots and serum, then obviously death could not have been caused by bleeding. Despite His prolonged physical torture during His trials and sufferings on the Cross, His physical death came suddenly when, with complete self-control and clarity of mind, Christ released His own spirit from His body. He did bleed; His back was beaten, His hands and feet were nailed, and thorns were forced into His scalp. But all these lacerations and cuts did not kill our Lord, and external bleeding was not the cause of His physical death. The soldier's spear would reveal the evidence to all who witnessed the crucifixion, and to those studying the Word of God, the exact manner of His physical death. This is so we would understand the importance of the phrase the "blood of Christ," which has nothing whatsoever to do with His physical death but rather His spiritual death. In Joh 19:30 our Lord said, "It is finished," and then He died physically, but His blood was still in His body. When John mentioned "blood and water" in 1Jo 5:6-8, he was refuting Gnosticism, which claimed that Jesus Christ was not true humanity, and that the Cross was merely an illusion.

The blood of Christ refers to the saving work of our Lord Jesus Christ, which He accomplished when He was judged as our substitute. The saving work of Christ includes redemption, reconciliation, and propitiation, and is often referred to as "the blood of Christ"—bearing our sins during those three hours of complete darkness. Therefore, the sight of blood and water is not only a witness to the true humanity of Christ but also medical proof that our Lord did not bleed to death.

Understanding this doctrine gives us a much deeper meaning of Rev 12:11, “Furthermore, they [believers in the Lord Jesus Christ] *overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb.*” This passage is dealing with believers, namely the Jews in the last half of the Tribulation period, who overcame Satan by responding to a necessary measure of the doctrine of Soteriology, in other words, a portion of the Gospel message, revealed to them by God the Holy Spirit and made effective for salvation. They became recipients of *propitiation, reconciliation, redemption, and justification*, all included in the great doctrine of Soteriology. They made a positive faith decision; they believed in the Lord Jesus Christ. Once they have made this non-meritorious decision to believe in Jesus Christ, they have joined the millions before them who have broken the back of Satan by believing in Christ. The first great victory over Satan is the victory of a momentary, one-time decision of personal faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. The first step then in overcoming Satan in the Tribulation, or in any period of human history, is to personally believe in the Lord Jesus Christ.

The next decision is related to Bible doctrine. Once a person accepts Christ as Savior, he is now in a new combat. He is on the side of the Lord in the angelic conflict, and he again has decisions to make. He now has daily options, and good decisions result in great blessing. The believer who consistently makes good decisions from a position of strength has control of his life and a personal sense of destiny, which is absolutely necessary in times of historical disaster. There is no greater historical disaster than the last 3½ years of the Tribulation. This is the time when Satan is confined to the earth and all fallen angels are confined to the earth, and Satan’s cosmic evangelism is at its highest.

Our corrected translation of Rev 12:11 reads, “Furthermore, they overcame him [Satan], because of the blood of the lamb [the first victory, the saving work of Christ on the Cross], and because of the doctrine applied by means of their testimony.” The Greek conjunction *kai* should be translated “furthermore,” followed by *dia logon*, from the Greek word *logos* which has many meanings, and here it means “doctrine.” Next comes the ablative of means from the noun *marturia*, which is *maturias*, meaning testimony or witness. The ablative reveals the manner or agency in which the main verb, “overcame,” is carried out.

Three things are necessary to glorify the Lord:

1. A personal sense of destiny from the inculcation of Bible doctrine, requiring many positive decisions.
2. Continual decisions from a position of strength, generated by the application of doctrine to experience.
3. A believer must remain in control of his life through the avoidance of the cosmic systems.

Perception and application of doctrine become the basis for the second victory over Satan. In the last half of the tribulation, abnormal circumstances demand daily application.

When you are under people testing, do not let people with mental attitude and verbal sins drag you down with them. This is where three factors in your life must synchronize:

1. The foundation of humility. When you are criticized, there is always something you can learn from it, but you must have humility.
2. You must have the proficiency of understanding the mechanics of God’s will, plan, and purpose for your life as well as the problem-solving devices, and you must use them.
3. You must have the spiritual strength to use the shield of faith (the faith-rest drill) in the environment of confusion and disaster. This is your integrity, and it comes from inculcation of Bible doctrine.

Paul advises us in Eph 4:29-32, “Let no unwholesome word proceed from your mouth, but only such a word as is good for edification according to the need of the moment, that it may give grace to those who hear. And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. Let all bitterness and wrath and anger and clamor and slander be put away from you,

along with all malice. And be kind to one another, tender-hearted, forgiving each other, just as God in Christ also has forgiven you." When it comes to overcoming these problems because of "the doctrine applied by means of your testimony," you have to remember that a thought can make or break you. If there is confusion in any area of life (the home, romance, friendship, etc.), then there is stress in that area. Confusion demands concentration—bringing reality from doctrine into the consciousness of the soul. Our soul is a spiritual battlefield. What you think determines whether you are winning or losing.

You must learn doctrine before you can think doctrine; you cannot think what you do not know, Eph 4:23, "*Then become refreshed [renewed] by means of the Spirit [by means of your thinking].*" Arrogance is confusion of mind, which matches the confusion of life without Bible doctrine. Therefore, there is a divine mandate given in Rom 12:2-3, "*And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind [the "renovation" of your thinking] that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect [divine good production]. For through the grace given to me I say to every man among you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think [thinking in terms of arrogance], but to think so as to have sound judgment [thinking in terms of sanity for the purpose of sound judgment], as God has allotted to each a measure of faith [a standard of thinking from doctrine].*" To "stop being conformed to this world" means to stop being in a state of confusion because of the human viewpoint of the world. Concentration on Bible doctrine in time of stress and confusion is essential.

Paul writes again in Col 3:2, "*Keep thinking objectively about things above [divine viewpoint] and not about things on the earth [human viewpoint].*" Bible doctrine is the thinking of God in relationship to the human race. Nothing is more important than knowing what God thinks, learning how God operates, and understanding His integrity. You can overcome these distractions by means of the Bible doctrine in your soul.

1. Bible doctrine in the soul produces confidence in time, Job 5:24-27, 2Co 5:6-8, Heb 10:35.
2. It produces divine viewpoint on life and establishes right priorities in the soul, Isa 55:7-9, 2Co 10:5.
3. It orients the believer to the plan of God, Isa 26:3-4, Rom 8:28.
4. It produces stability of mind, as opposed to the instability of the double-minded, Jam 1:8.
5. It is the basis for divine guidance and the execution of the will of God, Rom 12:2-3.
6. It leads to occupation with Christ (your social life with Christ) and the capacity and ability to love God and appreciate Him as the source of blessing when it comes, Phi 3:10, Eph 3:19, Heb 12:1-2.
7. It attains eternal grace blessing, Heb 11:9-10,13, Jam 1:25, 2:12-13.
8. Bible doctrine is applied in several directions:
9. Toward God—worship, love for God, and occupation with Christ.
10. Toward people—impersonal love for all mankind.
11. Toward self—spiritual self-esteem.
12. Toward dying—the application of the doctrine of *dying grace*.

All believers must learn to choose identification with the Lord over prosperity in the world. This means the application of Bible doctrine in every area of your life. It means rejecting pseudo-prosperity in the cosmic system for suffering with the people of God, Heb 11:25, "*Choosing rather to endure ill-treatment with the people of God, than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin.*" As believers we also need to choose relationships with people based on doctrine, 1Co 2:2, "*For I determined to know nothing among you except Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.*" We need to make daily choices for life and death, or blessing and cursing.



# THE STRATEGICAL AND THE TACTICAL WINNERS

1 John 4:5-4

11/02/03

*Revelation 12:11 Furthermore, they [believers in the Lord Jesus Christ] overcame him because of the blood of the Lamb and [they overcame him] because of the doctrine applied by means of their testimony, and they did not love their life even to death.*

1. These believers overcame Satan and the kingdom of darkness for three reasons:
2. The blood of Christ, which dealt with their sin.
3. The Word of God.

They did not love their life (they were not occupied with self-preservation, even to death).

The final phrase tells us how we know we are becoming a winner; it is when we are not afraid of death. It is when death has lost its sting and you live in the reality of Psa 23:4, *“Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I fear no evil; for Thou art with me.”* Then we can say with the Apostle Paul in 1Co 15:55, *“O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?”*

If you are a winner believer, you will have dying grace, whether it takes you a prolonged period of time to die, or you die in an instant; in either case, you have lost your fear of death. Believers who have failed are usually afraid of death, and Satan has the power to make them fear death, through the cosmic system, Heb 2:14-15, *“Since then the children share in flesh and blood, He Himself likewise also partook of the same, that through death He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil; and might deliver those who through fear of death were subject to slavery all their lives.”*

We see the believer’s victory over maximum pressure in Rev 12:11. These Tribulational believers were strategic winners because they had believed in Christ, and they were tactical winners because they had advanced to maturity during a very difficult time. This is the “winner’s verse,” and it shows two categories of winners. Every Christian is a strategical winner, because they have made a one-shot decision to personally trust in Jesus Christ, resulting in eternal life and a resurrection body (1Jo 5:4-5). The tactical winner resides, functions, and continues his momentum inside the predesigned plan of God.

The believer’s strategic victory is based on one decision, but it is the many positive decisions made after salvation that produces the tactical winner. The believer in Christ is already a strategic winner and has the *potential* of becoming a tactical winner in the angelic conflict. God has designed the Christian way of life so that we can be a double winner. The same word is used for the strategical and tactical winner—*nikao*, translated “overcome” in 1Jo 5:4, *“For whatever is born of God overcomes the world; and this is the victory that has overcome the world [our faith].”* The strategical winner at salvation is identified in Rev 12:11 by the phrase *“Furthermore they overcame him because of the blood of the lamb [the saving work of Christ on the Cross].”* However, *nikao* also means overcomer or winner, meaning a tactical winner after salvation. Winners are described by the word *nikao* in Rev 2:7,11,17,26, 3:5,12,21.

- Tactical winners will be able to eat of the Tree of Life in the middle of the Paradise of God, Rev 2:7. Only tactical winners have the privilege of access to the Gazebo in the garden and the Tree of Life. The winner is a member of the “Paradise Club” forever. This includes three special privileges—eating from the Tree of Life, access to the Gazebo in the Garden, and access to the Paradise of God, Rev 2:7.
- In Rev 2:11, they shall not be hurt by the second death because of blessing by association.
- In Rev 2:17, they eat of the hidden manna and receive a new name on a white stone; the new knighthood is given to the winner.
- In Rev 2:26, they are given power and authority to rule nations.

- In Rev 3:5, they are clothed with the uniform of glory, which includes presentation in the Court of Heaven to God the Father. While tactical winners are honored in the third heaven, losers will wait in the second heaven.
- In Rev 3:12, their names are written in the historical records of heaven and they have a coat of arms, which allows them to enter the New Jerusalem.
- In Rev 3:21, winners are granted to sit with Christ on His throne.

The momentary decision of faith in Jesus Christ breaks Satan's back strategically. However, there are two sides to the angelic conflict as it extends into human history—our strategic and tactical victories over the kingdom of darkness. The Chief Witness in all of human history is the humanity of Jesus Christ in hypostatic union. He created a strategy to defeat Satan and executed the plan magnificently, and therefore He is called, *"the Amen, the faithful and true Witness"* in Rev 3:15. The tactical witnesses are invisible heroes, believers who execute the predesigned plan of God in the Church-age. Mature believers are classified as tactical witnesses, which means we pursue the same objective, but in lesser magnitude than the strategic victory of our Lord. The term "tactical" means "relating to combat tactics as involving actions or means of less magnitude or at a shorter distance from a base of operations than those of strategy."

Our Lord accomplished the strategic victory of the angelic conflict through His salvation ministry on the Cross and His death, burial, resurrection, and ascension. The believer accomplishes the tactical victory of the angelic conflict through his advance to spiritual maturity. When our Lord was on the Cross, He won the strategic victory, and He will return at the Second Advent for His tactical victory. It is your daily attitude toward Bible doctrine, in both perception and application that becomes your tactical victory. You can be a strategic winner and a tactical loser. A strategic winner has eternal life, but in eternity he has nothing to show for the time that he spent on earth.

Rev 12:11 emphasizes the importance of tactical victory in time, growing in grace, daily perception of doctrine, and application of doctrine to the momentum tests that every believer must pass before becoming a winner: *"Because of the doctrine applied by means of their testimony."* We are left on this earth to become winners. Not all believers are tactical winners, in fact, in most generations the minority of believers are tactical winners. Tactical winners will be decorated with the *order of the morning star* and crowns. They will have the uniform of glory and will be on the "honors list," so that while the Tribulation is taking place on earth, they will be presented in the court of heaven.

There are two categories of winners among believers—the *strategic* winner and the *tactical* winner. The strategic winner has eternal life and can never lose it, and will have a resurrection body in heaven forever. The tactical winner, however, is going to have much more. In fact, the tactical winner is going to be invited to parties in eternity and enjoy special privileges that the strategic winner will not have. These mature believers are classified as tactical witnesses in time. Remember Act 1:8, *"But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth."*

The believer accomplishes the tactical victory of the angelic conflict through his advance to spiritual maturity in the predesigned plan of God; at this point he becomes an invisible hero. Anyone who believes in Christ is a winner strategically in the angelic conflict, therefore all Christians today, and all believers in the tribulation, are strategic victors, but it is the tactical victory that results from Bible doctrine. In God's plan, rank has its privileges, and there is no equality in heaven. Equality ends with the strategic victory; all believers have the strategic victory by virtue of having accepted Christ as Savior, but it is the tactical winners who are going to have higher rank and greater privileges in eternity.

Heaven is a perfect place, and a perfect place is based upon self-determination. You get into heaven by non-meritorious self-determination: *"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you shall be saved."* That is a one-shot decision, and that is your strategic victory, but after that, you have to make many "tactical"

decisions, and the decisions you make on earth determine your status quo in eternity. No one can do it for you, and if you are bullied into making these decisions you are not going to last in the spiritual life. Your tactical victory is between you and the Lord and is strictly your own business. Tactical victory will wipe out fear in your life. Then you can “fasten your seat belt” for any disaster that may hit you or even your country, and you can ride it out, and see it through, and watch it with fascination as God’s will unfolds. If enough believers achieve the tactical victory, they can avert disaster in a nation.

The signs of the last days are given in 2Ti 3:1-5, *“But realize this, that in the last days difficult times will come. For men [including believers] will be lovers of self [no spiritual life], lovers of money [greedy], boastful, arrogant, revilers or slanderers, disobedient to parents [lack of authority orientation from childhood], ungrateful [no capacity for appreciation], unholy, unloving [no capacity for impersonal love], irreconcilable [implacable, refusing to forgive because of bitterness and jealousy], malicious gossips, without self-control, brutal, haters of divine good, treacherous [faithless and disloyal], reckless [thoughtless, always thinking about self], conceited [puffed up, inflated with self-righteous arrogance], holding to a superficial form of the spiritual life, although they have denied its power; and avoid such men as these.”* When believers give up on the spiritual life, they become lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God. They are in such a state of confusion, they simply give up. Many believers go to church on Sunday and say, “That’s my spiritual life and that’s all that I need to do, see you next Sunday.” They never take in doctrine during the week, never study, and never pray; it never goes beyond Sunday morning all their life. In 2Ti 3:5 *“They hold to a superficial form of the spiritual life, although they have denied its power.”*

There are two powers in the spiritual life that believers deny—the filling of the Holy Spirit and the power of the Word of God. They have no metabolized doctrine circulating in the soul; they are out of fellowship and have abandoned the spiritual life, and garbage leaks in from the subconscious and begins to push out any doctrine that is already there. 2Ti 3:5 says, *“Avoid such men as these.”* You are to avoid such people as these because these people can have a strong influence on your life.

In verse 6 we read, “For among them are those who enter into households and captivate weak women weighed down with sins, led on by various impulses.” “Silly women” are those who think they are strong, when they are very weak. The Greek word here is *gunaikaria*, which does not just mean silly women but also males who are emotional in their souls. They derive their strength from their stubbornness and their concepts of morality, but they have no problem-solving devices. They know something is wrong, so they come back to Bible class, but they come with a soul full of garbage and they are very vulnerable, and so in verse 7, they are “always learning and never able to come to the knowledge [epignosis] of the truth.” They have no metabolized doctrine and are tactical losers, which means they reside and function in the cosmic system. The believer who is both a strategic and tactical winner will receive great blessings in time, and of course, greater rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

#### Characteristics of Strategic and Tactical Winners

1. The strategic winner glorifies Christ by his one-shot decision, faith in Christ.
2. The tactical winner glorifies Christ through his advance to maturity in the predesigned plan of God. Eph 2:8-10 deals with both the strategic winner and the tactical winner: *“For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God, not as a result of works, that no one should boast [strategic victory]. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand, that we should walk in them [tactical victory]. For we are His creation [Church-age believer, new spiritual species] having been created in Christ Jesus [baptism of the Holy Spirit] for good of intrinsic value achievements which God has prepared in advance, that we should walk by means of them.”*
3. The strategic winner receives a resurrection body and eternal life, but loses both temporal and eternal rewards, Mar 10:29-30, *“Jesus said, ‘Truly I say to you, there is no one who has left house*

*or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or farms, for My sake and for the gospel's sake, but that he shall receive a hundred times as much now in the present age, houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and farms, along with persecutions; and in the age to come, eternal life."*

4. The tactical winner receives supergrace blessing in time plus eternal reward in the eternal state.
5. The strategic winner is supported by logistical grace, while the tactical winner is supported both by logistical grace and supergrace blessing.
6. Therefore, God's grace provision for the strategic winner is the saving work of Christ on the Cross plus logistical grace support plus maximum divine discipline in time. The believer who is a strategic winner but a tactical loser lives in the cosmic system.
7. God's grace provision for strategic and tactical winners adds a provision of logistical grace, which the tactical winner utilizes properly, plus supergrace blessings, momentum testing, and suffering for blessing. For the tactical winner, his suffering is for blessing.
8. All believers are strategic winners by virtue of having believed in Christ, so all believers are strategic winners in the angelic conflict because of the saving work of Christ on the Cross, Rev 12:11, "*Furthermore they overcame him [Satan] because of the blood of the lamb [the saving work of Christ].*"
9. Only the unbeliever is a strategic loser in the angelic conflict. Therefore the unbeliever will share the destiny of Satan forever. He lives under Satan's system in time, which is the cosmic system.
10. The carnal, cosmic believer is a strategic winner, but a tactical loser.
11. The believer who is both a strategic and tactical winner has made thousands of decisions from a position of strength. He generally has personal control of his life and a personal sense of destiny from the inculcation of Bible doctrine and its application to his circumstances.
12. The tactical winner possesses an *edification complex* in his soul in time, plus the uniform of glory to go with his resurrection body in eternity.

#### Summary of the Difference Between Strategic Victory and Tactical Victory

1. The one-time decision, faith in Jesus Christ, produces a strategic winner in the angelic conflict, in contrast to the unbeliever, who is a loser in the angelic conflict, and shares the destiny of Satan, the eternal lake of fire. On the other side, in the tactical victory, we have a contrast; instead of a one-time decision, you have to make many positive decisions, with regard to the plan of God, the system for producing winners. You make decisions with regard to authority, i.e., enforced humility leading to genuine humility.
2. Under strategic victory Christ is glorified by one decision, the positive decision to believe in Him—one decision glorifying the Lord, which has eternal repercussions. Under tactical victory, He is glorified by many decisions, which have temporal and eternal repercussions.
3. Under strategic victory, we have eternal life and a resurrection body, but no eternal reward. Under tactical victory, the result is eternal life and a resurrection body, plus the uniform of glory and fantastic blessings in time and eternal rewards.
4. The strategic winner who fails to advance lives in the cosmic system, and he fears death, whereas the tactical winner lives in the predesigned plan of God and has no fear of death.
5. The strategic victor is sustained in time by logistical grace only; he is in the cosmic system, and he is the enemy of the Cross, but he is kept alive by logistical grace. The tactical victor is sustained in time by both logistical grace and supergrace blessing.
6. The cosmic believer is a strategic winner, but a tactical loser. The believer in the predesigned plan of God is both a strategic and tactical winner.

7. The strategic victor glorifies God only in the eternal state, whereas the tactical victor glorifies God in time, and in a special way in eternity.
8. He who is a strategic victor only is disciplined in time. His life is characterized by great frustration and failure. For the tactical victor suffering is for blessing. He is oriented to God's will and he knows what he is doing. He has a personal sense of destiny and has control of his life. Adversity and suffering, whether collective or individual, is always for his blessing.
9. The strategic victor makes the wrong decisions after salvation, whereas the tactical victor makes positive decisions from a position of strength. The tactical loser's wrong decisions mean that while he has eternal life, he is going to be "low on the totem pole" in eternity.

You can not have tactical victory without a pastor, a consistent teacher of the Word of God, and you have to be consistent in exposing yourself to his ministry. One of the differences between a strategic winner and a tactical winner is the fact that a tactical winner always finds the right pastor and sticks with him, but the strategic winner is running around looking for the right pastor, looking for the "second blessing," looking for something to spice up his life and compensate for his discipline, misery, frustration, and confusion.

In Eph 4:11-12, *"He gave some as apostles, and some as prophets [until the Canon of Scripture was completed], and some as evangelists, and some as pastors and teachers, for the equipping of the saints for the work of service [the purpose of the pastor-teacher], to the building up of the body of Christ."* In other words, to turn your strategical victory into a tactical victory, you have to submit to the ministry your teacher. Paul goes on in Eph 4:13, *"...until we all attain the goal, and of the knowledge [epignosis] of the Son of God, to a mature man [a mature status], to the measure which belongs to the fulness of Christ. Until we all [Royal Family], attain to the unity of the faith [attain the goal]."* The goal is the tactical victory of spiritual maturity, and we get there because of consistency in doctrine and the *epignosis* (wisdom) of the Son of God. Eph 4:14-16 continues, *"As a result, we are no longer to be children [immature], carried about by every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, by craftiness in deceitful scheming [an immature believer is a strategical victor because he has believed in Christ, but he is a tactical failure], but speaking the truth in love, we are to grow up in all aspects into Him, who is the head, even Christ, from whom the whole body [all believers] being fitted and held together by that which every joint supplies [being categorically taught, by every joint of supply]."* The secret to strength in the body is the joint; the body can be no stronger than the joints and, of course, in this analogy the pastor is the joint. This is the logistical grace provision of a right pastor-teacher.

# ANGER

Revelation 12:12

11/09/03

*Revelation 12:12-16 For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male child. And the two wings of the great eagle were given to the woman, in order that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she was nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent. And the serpent poured water like a river out of his mouth after the woman, so that he might cause her to be swept away with the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened its mouth and drank up the river which the dragon poured out of his mouth. And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and went off to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.*

This passage begins with the contrast between heaven and earth after the expulsion of Satan. The celebration in heaven takes place in verse 12: *“For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them.”* When Satan and his angels are cast out of heaven, it’s the “cleaning of the stables”; the stench of the fallen angels in heaven since prehistoric times is removed.

In Rev 12:12 the Greek verb translated “rejoice” is *euphraino*, which means to be glad, rejoice, and celebrate and connotes jubilation over God’s act of judgment. He has thrown Satan and all fallen angels out of heaven. This is addressed to all the elect angels and believers in heaven at that time, some in resurrection bodies (Church-age believers) and others in interim bodies awaiting their resurrection (the Old Testament saints). The resurrection is divided into four stages. The first resurrection is pictured as a battalion “pass-in-review,” divided into four echelons, 1Co 15:20-24, *“But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep. For since by a man came death, by a man also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ’s at His coming, then comes the end, when He delivers up the kingdom to the God and Father, when He has abolished all rule and all authority and power.”*

1. Alpha Company: The resurrection of Christ at the end of the great power experiment of the Hypostatic Union; He is “the first fruits of them that slept.” See Mat 28, Mar 16, Luk 24, Joh 20-21, Act 2:31-34.
2. Bravo Company: The resurrection of the Royal Family of God at the end of the great power experiment of the Church-age. See Joh 14:1-3, Phi 3:20-21, 1Co 15:51-57, 1Th 4:13-18, 1Jo 3:1-2.
3. Charlie Company: The resurrection of the Old Testament believers and Tribulational martyrs at the end of the Tribulation and the Second Advent. See Dan 12:13, Isa 26:19-20, Mat 24:31, Rev 20:4.
4. Delta Company: The resurrection of the millennial saints at the end of the Millennium. (At the Rapture, only those who were members of the Church-age receive their resurrection bodies.)

When Church-age believers die, they are absent from the body and face-to-face with the Lord, which means an *interim body*, a body that can have great happiness. 2Co 5:1 answers the question, “What happens when I die?”: *“For we know that if the earthly tent [analogous to our human body] which is our house is torn down, we have a building [another house] from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.”* Our present body is likened to a tent. When we die, there is another body waiting for us called the interim body, given to us at death and likened to a building; then comes the resurrection body, by analogy, a *mansion*. Once our earthly tent is dismantled, we have a “building

from God," the interim body. It is called "*a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens,*" which literally means in the Greek, "*indefinitely durable.*" The interim body lasts until the Rapture.

Paul goes on in 2Co 5:2, "*For indeed in this house [physical body] we groan, longing to be clothed with our dwelling [resurrection body] from heaven...*" Due to the problems of this life and this temporary body that faces adversity, we desire to put on our "dwelling," our resurrection body. Our present body is like a deteriorating "pup-tent" in contrast to the resurrection body, which is life in a permanent mansion. In 2Co 5:3-4, "*Inasmuch as we, having put it on, shall not be found naked. For indeed while we are in this tent [this present human body], we groan, being burdened [the problems of physical body], because we do not want to be unclothed, but to be clothed, in order that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life.*" There will never be a time when you do not have a house for your soul and spirit. There is always a body to clothe the invisible essence of the believer, therefore, the death of a believer should be a time of celebration and not mourning.

2Co 5:5-7 continues, "Now He who prepared us for this very purpose is God, who gave to us the Spirit as a pledge. [The Holy Spirit indwells us, guaranteeing our future glorification.] Therefore, being always of good courage [because we have a personal sense of destiny and are content], and knowing that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord for we walk by faith, not by sight..." We conduct our lives on the basis of perception, metabolization, and application of Bible doctrine and not on the basis of the way things appear for the moment. All that is written in scripture is eternally durable; all that is seen in the material universe is temporary and destined to change or for ultimate destruction, Mat 24:35, "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words shall not pass away."

2Co 5:8-10 continues, "We are of good courage, I say [due to our personal sense of destiny and contentment, sharing the happiness of God], and prefer rather to be absent from the body and to be at home [face-to-face] with the Lord. Therefore also we have as our ambition [motivation], whether at home or absent, to be pleasing to Him. For we must all [Church-age believers] appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad." "Good" is the Greek word *agathon*, referring to the production of divine good while living in your "tent" (human body). "Bad" is the Greek word *phaulos*, which refers to religion, activism, asceticism, human good, or human moral evil. However, whether a believer is a winner or a loser when he dies, he goes to heaven and has great happiness.

The interim body has capacity for fantastic happiness, and believers in the interim body will be celebrating—Old Testament Saints and Tribulation saints and martyrs—and it will be quite a party, Rev 12:12, "For this reason, keep celebrating..." The verb for "keep celebrating" is an imperative of permission, which implies no "gloating." This celebration is free from gloating. The elect angels and believers in heaven all celebrate in the most pure, virtuous sense of the word (see Oba 1:12 and Pro 24:17-18). There is no place for gloating, at any time, under any circumstances, for the born-again believer; gloating eliminates virtue, honor, and integrity, in the believer's life. Constant gloating is sure to produce instability and unhappiness, and can even result in psychosis and psychopathic behavior later in life.

Back in Rev 12:12, "*For this reason, keep on celebrating, O heavens...*" The Greek word translated "heavens" is the *vocative plural* noun *ouranoi*, referring to the three categories being addressed here: the elect angels who entered into an eternal relationship with God during the prehistoric angelic conflict, Church-age believers in resurrection bodies, and Old Testament and Tribulational believers in interim bodies. This is a great celebration because everyone involved has the capacity to celebrate without arrogance. This celebration in heaven occurs simultaneously with one of the worst times in human history—a time of wrath (1Th 5:9, Rev 6:16-17), judgment (Rev 14:7), indignation (Isa 34:1-3), punishment (Isa 24:20-21), trial (Rev 3:10), trouble (Jer 30:7), destruction (Joe 1:15), and darkness (Zep 1:14-18). If you are a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ today, you will not be here

during this period—you will be celebrating in heaven. The contrast is striking—immense celebration in heaven versus tragic disasters on earth.

We must make a distinction in Rev 12:12 between the “heavens” and “you who dwell in them.” The Greek word for “dwell” is *skenountes*, which means tent, and it often refers to the human body and here refers specifically to the believers in the interim body; in Joh 1:14, this verb is used when Christ “tabernacled” among us. In Rev 12:12, it refers to the Tribulational martyrs and Old Testament saints. We can see why they should celebrate when we look at Rev 6:9-10, *“And when He broke the fifth seal, I saw underneath the altar the souls of those who had been slain because of the word of God, and because of the testimony which they had maintained; and they cried out with a loud voice, saying, ‘How long, O Lord, holy and true, wilt Thou refrain from judging and avenging our blood on those who dwell on the earth?’”* It is only a matter of time before the vengeance of God comes through, Rom 12:14-21.

1. God can take any evil situation, such as the persecution of believers in the Tribulation period, and convert it into divine good, Gen 50:20, *“As for you, you meant evil against me, but God meant it for good.”*
2. Whenever someone tries to curse or destroy another believer, the Lord will turn the curse into a blessing when the believer operates in the faith-rest drill, Deu 23:5 *“The Lord your God turned the curse into a blessing for you because the Lord your God loves you.”*
3. When evil attacks you, the Lord can turn it into a blessing, providing that you operate in the faith-rest drill and let Him handle the situation.
4. The believer does not have to fight and defend himself; God will do that for the believer who operates in the faith-rest drill, 2Th 1:6.
5. This is why we are also told to stop being anxious and worried and let God handle any unjust and unfair situation, Isa 35:4.
6. We are commanded to never take revenge, Rom 12:19.
7. If you are being mistreated in any situation, do not lift up your hand against another person, 1Sa 24:12.
8. If you have been robbed by another believer, do not take out your vengeance and frustration on him, but give it over to the Lord, 1Th 4:6.
9. Never repay evil with evil and give someone what you think that they deserve, Pro 20:22.
10. When someone has wronged you, let the Lord repay him according to his deeds, 2Ti 4:14.

As we read on in Rev 12:12, *“Woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has come down to you...”* The “woes” are all related to the release of demonic activity and the presence of fallen angels on earth. The first woe mentioned in Rev 8:13 deals with the attack of the first demon assault army in Rev 9. The second woe in Rev 9:12-11:14 deals with the attack of the second demon assault army. The third woe covers the time from Satan’s expulsion from heaven to earth until his imprisonment in Rev 20:1-3. This “woe” is the Greek word *ouai*, which is an exclamation of grief. Notice that the earth is mentioned first and then the sea. The distinction is made because we are talking about creatures who inhabit the land and creatures who inhabit the sea; however, this verse is not talking about fish or people in the sea. The Greek word for “sea” is *thalassan*, which refers to the flood waters of the universal flood where the fallen angels are imprisoned. It is talking about the sea as the most powerful set of gates ever used for a prison.

The Bible teaches that there was a pre-Adamic race on earth, and also correlates the sea with judgment, as in Rev 20:13, *“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead which were in them; and they were judged, every one of them according to their deeds.”* According to Rev 21:1, there is no more sea in the new heaven and new earth. The sea appears to be the location where fallen angels who have broken the rules of the angelic conflict are incarcerated, 2Pe 2:4, *“For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment...”* The Bible distinguishes between “fallen angels”



and “evil spirits.” We do not know much about the distinction, but many scholars believe that the demons inhabited the earth at one time in physical form and that God incarcerated them in the sea or the part of Hades called “the deep.” This distinction between demons and angels was understood by the Jews, Act 23:6-9. These creatures were said to be different than the fallen angels and they are believed to have populated this earth in the flesh before the ruin described in Gen 1:2, “And the earth became formless and void, and darkness was over the surface of the deep.” We read that the demons are continually seizing the bodies of men to use them as their own, indicating a tiresome unease and a wandering unrest, a longing to escape the intolerable condition of being unclothed—for which they were not created. They are even willing to enter into the filthy bodies of swine (Mat 8:28-32).

Rev 12:12 continues with the phrase, “*Having great wrath, knowing that he has only a short time.*” The expulsion of Satan from heaven results in confining him to human history and his total frustration. “Great wrath” is two Greek words, *megan* and *thumon*, which form an idiom, literally meaning “foaming with fury.” *Thumos* is derived from the Greek verb *thuo*, and means boiling or foaming with anger or rage. Satan demonstrates frustrated arrogance from his own bad decisions. Arrogant people never take the responsibility for their own decisions, just as Satan never will. When you make bad decisions, you start hurting; you blame others and fly into a rage, resulting in vindictiveness, implacability, irrationality, and revenge. Revenge motivates terrible violence and great historical disaster.

Eph 4:31 deals with two types of anger found in the word of God: “*Let all bitterness and wrath and anger and clamor and slander be put away from you, along with all malice.*” The Greek noun translated “anger” is *orge*, which has to do with mental attitude anger, an inner disposition of anger. This word is used in a powerful and positive way in Mar 3:5, where the Lord Jesus Christ was in a room filled with legalists, and He was “*looking around at them with anger, grieved at their hardness of heart.*” In the negative, sinful way, this word means to be mentally angry and to reveal it by your disposition, qualities, and traits. The Greek noun translated “anger” is the same one we have in Rev 12:12, *thumon*. *Thumon* is a more aggressive anger; it has the connotation of being moved and controlled by the emotional sin of anger. This is the person who does things without thinking because he is angry. *Thumon* also means to be furious, infuriated, irate, wrathful, fierce, savage, turbulent, unrestrained, and violent. Both of these words refer to anger, which is used three ways in the Bible—(1) a mental attitude sin, (2) an anthropopathism related to divine judgment, and (3) legitimate anger against evil.

As a mental attitude sin, anger expresses antagonism, hatred, bitterness, resentment, and irrationality. It can be mental or emotional or both. The Bible distinguishes between mental and emotional anger—if your right lobe is dominating and you become angry, you will react in mental anger (*orge*), but if your reaction is from emotion, then it is emotional anger (*thumos*). Both are unjustifiable reactions. Satan’s anger turned a genius into an idiot, as it can turn anyone into an idiot. A person is never smart when angry, which is why many stupid and embarrassing things are said in anger. When you are dealing with problems, you must have your senses about you, therefore, do not lose your temper. Anger is associated with grieving the Holy Spirit (Eph 4:30-31), it is a violation of the Royal Family honor code and hinders effective prayer (1Ti 2:8), and it is the source of “chain sinning,” (Heb 12:15).

1. Pro 6:34 teaches that jealousy produces anger in a person.
2. An angry, quick-tempered person acts foolishly, Pro 14:17.
3. A person who is slow to anger has great understanding, Pro 14:29.
4. Anger can be stirred up through the sins of the tongue, Pro 15:1.
5. An angry person stirs up strife and dissensions, Pro 15:18.
6. Anger is the reason people dig up or invent evil about others, Pro 16:27.
7. A person who is slow to anger is better than the mighty, Pro 16:32.

8. Wisdom overlooks the faults in others, Pro 19:11.
9. Anger brings on self-induced misery, Pro 19:19.
10. Anger causes misery to those in your periphery, Pro 21:9.
11. Those who ridicule and criticize are controlled by anger, Pro 22:10.
12. We are told to separate from angry people in Pro 22:24 because of Pro 22:25, "*Lest you learn his ways, and find a snare for yourself.*"
13. An angry person is said to be a whisperer and contentious, to have burning lips and a wicked heart, and to be filled with hate, flattery, deceit, and lies, and to have a flattering mouth, Pro 26:20-28.
14. Anger motivates jealousy and cruelty, Pro 27:4.
15. It is impossible to restrain an angry person, Pro 27:15-16.
16. Anger comes from losing one's temper for lack of wisdom, Pro 29:11.
17. Anger is never an isolated sin, Pro 29:22.
18. The expulsion of Satan from heaven means that he is confined now to planet earth and human history, and therefore he is very frustrated. Satan operates in frustrated arrogance from his own bad decisions. And like Satan, we often create our own frustration.

# THE REJECTION OF SATAN

Revelation 12:13

11/16/03

*Revelation 12:12* For this reason, be celebrating you heavens [*elect angels and resurrected Church-age believers*], and you, who live temporarily in them [*Old Testament saints and Tribulational martyrs, who reside in heaven in the interim body*]. Woe to both land and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having and holding onto great wrath [*foaming with fury*], knowing that his time is short.

Now that he has been evicted from heaven, Satan knows that he has only 3½ more years of freedom before he goes to jail for 1,000 years.

When we must face the fact that time is short, two kinds of people are revealed—those who have virtue, integrity, honor, and those who do not. Those who are without these qualities cannot control their lives and have no personal sense of destiny, i.e., Satan. It is very frustrating for a creature who knows that he is superior to all other creatures to realize that time and success are passing him by. He “foams with fury” in his great anger and rage, knowing that his time is short. There comes a realization in the life of all people, both good and bad, those with virtue and those without it, when they know that in some way their time is short.

Those who *react* to the pressure when their time is short, rather than *respond*, fall into a series of evils based on arrogance. It is based upon vanity, pride, vindictiveness, implacability, and hatred, and it always brings out the worst in them. There is always someone to blame. When a person relates who he is to who he was in the past, he does so for one of two reasons:

1. He is arrogant and thinks that he was more successful than he actually was.
2. He is filled with self-pity and is in a sulking mood, looking for self-justification because of his present situation (Operation “Blame Game”).

King David gave us an example of how we should think under pressure; in Psa 27:1 he said, “The Lord is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? The Lord is the defense of my life; whom shall I dread?” and in 1Sa 17:47, “The battle is the Lord’s.”

As we have seen in the past, Operation Blame Game means refusing to take the responsibility for one’s own decisions as Adam and the woman did in the Garden, Gen 3:12-13. When we fail, we have two choices—we can continue to blame the world for our stress and our present situation, or we can take responsibility for own decisions and reactions and go forward in the plan of God. Going forward requires occupation with the person of Christ, keeping the proper focus, and not blaming others. When David wrote Psa 103:3-12, this is what he was dealing with: “*Who pardons all your iniquities; who heals all your diseases; who redeems your life from the pit; who crowns you with lovingkindness and compassion; who satisfies your years with good things, so that your youth is renewed like the eagle. The Lord performs righteous deeds, and judgments for all who are oppressed. He made known His ways to Moses, His acts to the sons of Israel. The Lord is compassionate and gracious, slow to anger and abounding in lovingkindness. He will not always strive with us; nor will He keep His anger forever. He has not dealt with us according to our sins, nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is His lovingkindness toward those who fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.*”

In verse 3, He pardons all our iniquities and heals all our diseases, maybe not in our timing, but in His. In verse 4, He redeems our life from the pit that we have fallen into when we have failed. In verse 5, He “satisfies our years,” all through the Christian life, with blessings; we must focus on the positive and on what the Lord provides, Phi 4:8. In verse 10, “He has not dealt with us according to our sins, nor rewarded us according to our iniquities.” God does not love us based upon conditions. In verses 11-12, “As high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is His lovingkindness toward those

who respect Him. As far as the east is from the west, So far has He removed our transgressions from us." God is the ultimate One to whom you can turn when everyone else turns against you. The crushing experiences of failure can be brought to the Lord, and you will never hear Him shame you for coming. You can come at any time without ever interrupting Him, and say to Him, "Here I am again, with the same wounds," and you will hear Him say, "Here is My compassion, here is My love." He has a lovingkindness that never fails.

When we fail, it affects our security and our focus, and we begin to look to somebody else to blame. We need to accept the responsibility for our own failures and stop blaming others. Psa 103:13-14 continues, "*Just as a father has compassion on his children, so the Lord has compassion on those who fear Him. For He Himself knows our frame; He is mindful that we are but dust.*" We need to count on the Lord's constant acceptance and understanding. You will never get that from people, but you will always get that from the Lord. People will look for achievement and then base their acceptance of you on the basis of that achievement; however, "The Lord knows our frame, He remembers that we are but dust." People look at the externals, but God sees motive, Heb 4:13.

We must learn to let God be God and stop wrapping "human skin" around Him. Then our days of discouragement will become fewer and fewer. Most of our discouragement comes in the problem of *focus* and *security*—we focus on *people*, we look for security from *people*, and when we do so, we will be seen as a "god" one day and a "murderer" the next, Act 28:4-6. When we have the proper focus, we will find true security, realizing that He sees us as "dust" and accepts us as we are. Verses 15-18 of Psa 103 brings out the principle of refraining from comparing ourselves with others: "*As for man, his days are like grass; as a flower of the field, so he flourishes. When the wind has passed over it, it is no more; and its place acknowledges it no longer. But the lovingkindness of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting on those who fear Him, and His righteousness to children's children.*" We look at the neighbor who has never lost his job, we look at the Christian at church who has not been there as long as we have and yet is further advanced, and we make comparisons, and when we do so, we are unwise, 2Co 10:12. The problem is a matter of our perspective; given the right perspective, even a failure can look positive.

In Joh 2:23-25, "When He [Jesus] was in Jerusalem at the Passover, during the feast, many believed in His name, beholding His signs which He was doing. But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting Himself to them, for He knew all men, and because He did not need anyone to bear witness concerning man for He Himself knew what was in man." Jesus saw man, not as what they were, but as what they were to become. On that basis He chose His twelve apostles, knowing there was not one perfect man in the bunch. In Psa 103:19-20, David wraps it up by describing the angels: "The Lord has established His throne in the heavens; and His sovereignty rules over all. Bless the Lord, you His angels, mighty in strength, who perform His word, obeying the voice of His word!" David is now addressing the angels, after addressing himself, and he says through the testimony of the angels, "Serve Him, do His will, obey Him, and stand firm—God knows what He is doing."

At the time, David had personally failed in a huge way, but he still did not quit (Act 13:22). Your response to your failures is your personal responsibility; it is not the responsibility of your boss, your mate, your friend, your teacher, or your neighbor. Therefore, the first person you should talk to when it comes to your failures is *yourself*. You should then immediately go to God and bond the two together. If you blame others and do not take responsibility for your actions, you will never experience victory in the spiritual life.

Failure does not necessarily mean sin—it might be something as insignificant as just not reaching a daily goal, or as large as not experiencing your dreams. When you realize you are not going to achieve your goal, you must get a hold of your soul as David did, and tell yourself, "You have a choice of becoming bitter, moody, and unhappy, and blaming somebody else, *or* blaming yourself"; the choice is yours to say, "Lord, I'm counting your benefits." This means being occupied with Christ, and

that you will not fall when you fail, Psa 37:23-24. When you do fail, and you will, examining and dwelling on negative thoughts will be your downfall. Do not struggle with these thoughts, because they will draw you into a battle you have no hope of winning. When you keep your guilt within, you will blame others for your failures. We all fail, but we have not failed miserably until we begin to blame others for our failures.

The legalistic individual always blames others for his problems, with his mindset of self-righteousness and his lifestyle of self-justification. No one even grows up as a human being until he takes the responsibility for his own decisions, especially the negative ones. All blame is a waste of time because no matter how much fault you find with another, and regardless of how much you blame him, it will not change you. The only thing blame does is to keep the focus off you when you are looking for external reasons to explain your unhappiness or frustration. You may succeed in making another person feel guilty about something by blaming him, but you won't succeed in changing whatever it is about you that is making you unhappy.

Satan is going to blame the Jews for his failure to take over the world and establish his own utopia, and that is why we read in Rev 12:13,15,17, *"And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male child... And the serpent poured water like a river out of his mouth after the woman, so that he might cause her to be swept away with the flood... And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and went off to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus."* Satan entered into Operation Blame Game. For the loser, there is always someone else to blame.

When you have the right lifestyle, you have control of your life in living or in dying or in any situation, even when you know the time is short. When under pressure, a winner believer does not change his lifestyle. The real test of how you have lived your life, when the time is short, is to carry on just as you always have, rather than accelerate bad decisions. In the last 3½ years of the tribulation, we see the acceleration of Satan's bad decisions. He must crowd all the evil of his system into 3½ years, therefore, it is called the Great Tribulation. Whoever you are, when you come to a pressure period in your life, where the time is short, all your virtue or all your evil comes out. If you have personal control of your life, and a personal sense of destiny, you will smile in the face of great danger, Job 5:22. Unfortunately for many individuals, no matter how short their time is, they always make time to blame everyone else for their stress. However, for the one who has made the right decisions and advanced to maturity, he carries on as usual.

Satan has always hated the Jews, so before he loses rulership of the world, he will attack them. The first thing he does is to express his hatred, vindictiveness, and implacability. This is the third woe, beginning with the seventh trumpet in Rev 12:13, *"And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male child."* This is the beginning now of the eschatology of the devil's desperation. The Greek verb for "thrown" is *ballo*, and it means to be thrown violently or intensively, to be cast, "dunged," moved out, or forced out. He is now aware that the time is short; he cannot escape the reality of the plan of prophecy and he sees the prophecy being fulfilled in the historical trends. No creature knows the human race as well as Satan does, and all his hatred and cruelty will be poured out on the Jews.

Satan has been rejected and he hates rejection. Rejection can be a very serious problem if not handled correctly, because there is always a tendency to react. A common reaction to being hurt is withdrawal from the environment where the pain was inflicted; this withdrawal can be very detrimental to the individual, especially if he withdraws from the local assembly to which God has called him. Even our Lord had to handle rejection, although He was perfect; therefore, we should not be shocked to have to deal with it ourselves. Rejection is often a matter of people's perception of reality. They think that they are being rejected when in reality they are simply victims of their own insecurities! God had to warn Samuel about this in 1Sa 8:4-7, *"Then all the elders of Israel gathered*

*together and came to Samuel at Ramah; and they said to him, 'Behold, you have grown old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now appoint a king for us to judge us like all the nations.' But the thing was displeasing in the sight of Samuel when they said, 'Give us a king to judge us.' And Samuel prayed to the Lord. And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Listen to the voice of the people in regard to all that they say to you, for they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me from being king over them.'"*

Rejection is one of the greatest pressures in life because very few people have the proper concept of reality, and many believers are not even mature as human beings, lacking confidence or thinking more highly of themselves than what they ought to. Very few believers present their body as a "living sacrifice," as commanded in Rom 12:1-6. Our worship is not just coming to the local assembly and sitting down, taking notes, and learning doctrine.

The arrogant believer is always defending his own perception of self and always making excuses for what he should or should not be doing. He thinks more highly of himself than what he ought to, and therefore he enters into self-deception, 1Co 10:12, *"Therefore let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall."* When believers fall into a state of anxiety or feel challenged, they immediately rise to their own defense. They get defensive because they feel that there is some form of rejection being directed at them. In some cases, the perception of reality is so distorted that the believer who assumes that he is being rejected is actually the rejecter. He has brought about the circumstances in which he is actually the rejecter, but in defense of his position, he immediately assumes he has been rejected. It is always someone else's fault, but in reality, the Lord is the One who has allowed these things to take place (Deu 32:39). Many times these situations that cause believers to feel rejected come directly from the Lord for the purpose of rebound and recovery. People who get wounded easily and feel rejected are people who do not have a right relationship with the Lord. The issue is where they stand in their spiritual life. Your spiritual life is the only solution to the problem of rejection.

# WHEN THE TIME IS SHORT, WAKE UP BEFORE IT'S TOO LATE!

Luke 12:13-21

11/23/03

*Revelation 12:12-13 For this reason, be celebrating you heavens [elect angels and resurrected Church-age believers] and you who live temporarily in them [Old Testament saints and Tribulational martyrs, who reside in heaven in the interim body]. Woe to both land and the sea, because the devil has come down to you, having and holding on to great wrath [foaming with fury], knowing that his time is short. And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman [Israel] who gave birth to the male child [the Lord Jesus Christ].*

Many people react in crazy ways when they realize the time is short, as Satan does here. However, with the right lifestyle, you have control of your life in living or in dying, even though you know the time is short. Whatever you are, when you come to a pressure period in your life, all your virtue or all your evil comes out. Consider the fool who ignores the fact that the time may be short; his testimony is given in Luk 12:13-21.

*Luk 12:13-21 And someone in the crowd said to Him, "Teacher, tell my brother to divide the family inheritance with me." But He said to him, "Man, who appointed Me a judge or arbiter over you?" And He said to them, "Beware, and be on your guard against every form of greed; for not even when one has an abundance does his life consist of his possessions." And He told them a parable, saying, "The land of a certain rich man was very productive. And he began reasoning to himself, saying, 'What shall I do, since I have no place to store my crops?' And he said, 'This is what I will do: I will tear down my barns and build larger ones, and there I will store all my grain and my goods. And I will say to my soul, "Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years to come; take your ease, eat, drink and be merry." But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your soul is required of you; and now who will own what you have prepared?' So is the man who lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God."*

Our Lord sees deep within the heart of this man; He sees the problem of greed, and He does not address the request, but simply passes it off with a powerful statement, "Man, who appointed Me a judge or arbiter over you?" The fool ignores the fact that the time may be short and concentrates on the things of this earth. Our Lord says to the crowd (not to the man), "Beware, and be on your guard against every form of greed; for not even when one has an abundance does his life consist of his possessions." He is not merely addressing greed; He is addressing life.

How would you live if you believed the time was short? The viewpoint we need is given in Jam 4:13-14, "Come now, you who say, 'Today or tomorrow, we shall go to such and such a city, and spend a year there and engage in business and make a profit.' Yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow. You are just a vapor that appears for a little while and then vanishes away." There is nothing wrong with having much; our Lord never attacks having much, but He does attack motives, and He warns the wealthy about being blinded by how much they have, when in reality the time could be short. We are to enjoy our health, our children, our mate, and all our blessings because the time may be short for us to enjoy them.

*"This very night your soul is required of you; and now who will own what you have prepared?"* Death has a way of correcting our perspective. When we view life in the long haul and realize we all wind up in the grave, it does wonders for our greed in the passing of time. There are many forms of

greed, and those who have little can be just as greedy as those who have much. There is nothing wrong with owning things, however, something is wrong when those things own us.

The principle of planning ahead and thinking beyond today is taught in the Bible. It was not wrong for the man to want to build larger barns to store his crops; it would have been wrong for him not to do so, to let them rot in the fields. However, he made two fatal mistakes:

1. He did not understand himself; he forgot about his soul. He thought only in terms of the tangible, that which he could see, touch, and hold. We cannot take treasure with us when we die, but the Lord Jesus Christ made it very clear that we can send it in on ahead, Mat 6:19-21, *“Do not lay up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal; for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.”*
2. He did not care about others. There is not one word here about him giving to others. Never once does he pray for divine guidance. Never once does he think in terms of other people.

*This man is in for a grim awakening because the fool ignores the fact that the time may be short. The fool thinks he is going to live forever. We learn several principles from this passage:*

1. When you are blessed with much, give generously. Our Lord does not criticize those who are blessed with much, but He reserves His strongest words for those who are innately selfish, and who keep rather than give.
2. When you plan for the future, think of eternity. When you begin to think eternally, it will do wonders for your planning. You will realize that your fortune, little or great that it may be, will simply be turned over to those who did not work for it.
3. Whether you have much or little, hold it loosely.

How much you have is not even the issue; it is what you do with what you have before it is too late. This principle applies to believers who need to respond to doctrine before it is too late. Many believers keep saying they will get with it later, Isa 29:24, Rom 8:29-30. These are the ones who never can handle any kind of adversity or pressure. When helpless people face pressure they always fall apart; they cannot handle it without the humility to rebound and recover. In times of adversity Bible doctrine is the believer's source of comfort, Psa 119:50,92,107. For some people, everywhere they go, trouble follows them, but for these same people, God's doctrines can be their delight, Psa 94:19, Pro 12:25. Anxiety and stress affect the right lobe of the soul, but a good word, or reliable doctrine, makes the heart happy. It is good to have people in your life who build you up rather than tear you down, especially in times of adversity.

The Lord said in Joh 16:33, *“These things I have spoken to you, that in me you may have peace. In the world you have Tribulation, but take courage; I have overcome the world.”* Adversity is used by the Lord to test the believer and to wake up the believer before it is too late, Isa 48:10, *“Behold, I have refined you, but not as silver; I have tested you in the furnace of affliction.”* In Pro 24:10 there is no place for sloppiness in the Christian way of life: *“If you are slack [careless or sloppy] in the day of distress, your strength is limited.”* In Mal 3:2, fire represents the way God puts His people through trouble and sorrow in order to remove them from the influence of evil, but not to fill them with stress: *“But who can endure the day of His coming? And who can stand when He appears? For He is like a refiner's fire and like fullers' soap.”* We read of the early church in Act 5:41-42, *“So they went on their way from the presence of the Council, rejoicing that they had been considered worthy to suffer shame for His name. And every day, in the temple and from house to house, they kept right on teaching and preaching Jesus as the Christ.”* Whether it was in season or out of season, whether it was easy or difficult, they kept teaching and preaching about the Lord Jesus Christ every day.

We are protected from becoming bitter when we understand that adversity is for our own blessing, Rom 5:3, *“And not only this, but we also rejoice in our Tribulations, knowing that tribulation*



[affliction or hardship] *brings about perseverance.*" The faith-rest drill protects the believer from allowing adversity to become stress. There are many pressures in life designed to draw us closer to God, and therefore we do not want to give in to stress and miss the purpose of this adversity, Psa 50:15, 86:7, 91:15, 118:5, 119:67,75. The Lord uses adversity and affliction in a positive way to draw us to Him, and to strengthen us, Exo 1:12, *"But the more they [the Egyptians] afflicted them [the Jews], the more they multiplied and the more they spread out."*

Worrying (Luk 10:41), a desire for money (Mat 13:22), a desire for pleasure (Luk 8:14), or any excessive desire can be a tremendous source of pressure, Mar 4:19. Most Christians fall into evil as soon as they come under pressure, because they never established a system of priorities on a daily basis. You cannot jump over the mundane, routine days of life, from one "highlight" to another, or live in the unrealistic viewpoint of the "party" lifestyle. It is your daily perspective that gives you the power and ability to face disaster. If your daily priorities include doctrine first, then every day is a special day, because you establish a routine by which you make positive decisions for doctrine, have personal control of your life, and have a personal sense of destiny. The life without routine is not organized for either adversity or prosperity. A lot of believers fail because they do not wake up before it's too late and because they do not know how to handle the times of monotony or boredom or routine. In Ecc 9:10, the Bible says, *"Whatever your hand finds to do, verily, do it with all your might."* Zec 4:10 tells us, *"Do not despise the day of small things!"* You may think that what you are doing on a continual and faithful basis is a "small thing," but God does not. The secret is *priority*; if your priority is doctrine and you are consistent, you will make the right decisions for doctrine, and your daily life will be happy.

In Rev 12:13, we see the result of Satan's unhappiness: *"And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male child."* Frustrated, arrogant, unhappy people become persecutors. In Rom 12:14-21, we are to handle persecution in this manner: *"Bless those who persecute you; bless and curse not, rejoice with those who rejoice, and weep with those who weep. Be of the same mind toward one another [doctrinal viewpoint]; do not be arrogant, but associate with the humble. Do not be wise in your own estimation. Never pay back evil for evil to anyone. Respect what is right in the sight of all men. If possible, so far as it depends on you, be at peace [live in harmony] with all men. Never take your own revenge, beloved, but leave room for the wrath of God, for it is written, "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay," says the Lord. But if your enemy is hungry, feed him, and if he is thirsty, give him a drink; for in so doing you will heap burning coals upon his head. Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with the [absolute] good."* This is tantamount to dependence on the integrity of God rather than on revenge and retaliation, and the function of *impersonal love*.

Remember that God's will for your life as a member of the Royal Family of God is to *bless you*. His will is to give you prosperity in the midst of all adverse situations. Therefore, in eternity past, God provided a fantastic plan, which included His highest and best just for you. If you go back as far as you can go in your imagination to the beginning of the past, and you step off, you are now in eternity past, and God is there, Gen 1:1, *"In the beginning God..."* And even then, He was thinking of you and your adversities, Rev 13:8. Then if we could go forward to the farthest point of the future, as far as our imagination can take us, and step into the infinity of the future, God is there, Rev 21:1. We go from Gen 1:1, *"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth,"* to Rev 21:1, *"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth passed away, and there is no longer any sea."*

In 2Pe 3:10 we see a part of the believer's future and the challenge of pressing on and waking up before it's too late: *"But the day of the Lord will come like a thief [the new heaven and new earth in Rev 21:1]. But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed [dissolved] with intense heat, and the earth and its works will be burned up."* The principle here is that what endures the destruction of the universe establishes the

true eternal values of life and the highest priorities. Waking up before it's too late means that you have permanent values and all other values are built around them. This is how you *think* as you are looking forward. In 2Pe 3:11, this challenge is based upon your understanding that the destruction of the entire universe at the termination of human history will inevitably happen. This at the end of the Millennium, the future 1,000-year reign of our Lord on earth, Rev 20:2-7, 21:1. *"Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way [the earth and its works], what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct [living the spiritual life]."* 2Pe 3:12-14 goes on to say, *"Looking forward with confidence and hastening of the coming of the day of God, on account of which the heavens will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! But according to His promise [of life in the eternal state] we are looking forward with confidence for new heavens and a new earth, in which perfect righteousness dwells. Therefore, beloved, since we are looking forward with confidence for these things [the new heavens and new earth], be diligent [self-motivated] to be found by Him in peace [a state of tranquility], spotless [the execution of the spiritual life] and blameless [the result of fulfillment of the spiritual life]."*

Having this attitude fulfills the principle of living your life in the light of eternity, in spite of the monotony and routine of life. Waking up before it's too late means that we are to look forward, never backward. The future of the believer in the eternal state becomes a great motivator once we have woken up and found the right priorities. God is building character in your life through the daily routine functions of your life, without you even seeing it.

# A THANKSGIVING DAY REMEMBRANCE

Isaiah 49:1-6

11/30/03

The first official Thanksgiving Proclamation was written by Samuel Adams on November 1, 1777: "It is therefore recommended to set apart Thursday the eighteenth day of December next, for solemn Thanksgiving and praise, that with one heart and one voice the good people may express the grateful feelings of their hearts and consecrate themselves to the service of their divine benefactor."

As a six-week-old child, Francis Jane Crosby was blinded for life. She lost her father when she was one year old, and later in life she would lose her only child in its infancy. In spite of these tragedies, "Fanny" Crosby was always cheerful and happy, free from the bitterness that so easily besets most humans. She had a natural talent for writing poems and was often asked to recite her poetry. Eventually, her writing brought her national recognition, and she was invited to visit presidents, generals, and other notable dignitaries. When she died in 1915, just six weeks shy of her 95<sup>th</sup> birthday, Francis had written 8,500 poems and songs.

Most importantly, Fanny loved Jesus Christ. Her love for the Lord became the inspiration for her thousands of songs and poems, many of which are still sung in churches every weekend today. Many beloved hymns bear the name Fanny Crosby, including "To God be the glory, great things He hath done," "I am thine, O Lord, I have heard thy voice," and "Blessed Assurance." When a preacher once remarked sympathetically that it was a pity God had not given her sight, Fanny replied, "Do you know that if at birth I had been able to make one petition, it would have been that I should be born blind?" The preacher asked her why. "Because" she said, "When I get to heaven, the first face that shall ever gladden my sight will be that of my Savior!" Focusing on Jesus and seeing the good in God's plans for her, Fanny reached millions of people around the world. What an attitude to be reminded of at the Thanksgiving celebration. Rather than become so occupied with family events, a dinner, a day of football games may we, like Fanny Crosby, rejoice in the goodness of our God in every situation, that like her we can sing, "This is my story, this is my song, praising my Savior, all the day long."

*1Th 5:18, "In everything give thanks; for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus."*

*Col 3:15 "Let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which indeed you were called in one body; and be thankful. Let the word of Christ richly dwell within you, with all wisdom teaching and admonishing one another with psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with thankfulness in your hearts to God. And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks through Him to God the Father."*

Each year our country sets aside a special holiday known as Thanksgiving. This holiday, more than any other, provides an opportunity for all of us to re-examine what America is really all about spiritually, and where we stand in relationship to that principle. Perhaps the best place to begin is the discovery of America. Most Americans have no idea who Christopher Columbus really was and the reasons for his journey and what it accomplished. There are many fascinating principles related to this great holiday, but unfortunately, many people are too busy celebrating to give thanks to the One who truly deserves it.

It may come as a surprise to many people that Christopher Columbus apparently was a Christian, as indicated by his ship's logbooks: *"It was the Lord who put into my mind, I could feel His hand upon me, that fact that it would be possible to sail from here to the Indies. All who heard of my project rejected it with laughter, ridiculing me. There is no question that the inspiration was from the Holy Spirit because He comforted me with rays of marvelous inspiration from the Holy Scriptures. I am a most unworthy sinner, I've cried out to the Lord for grace and mercy, and they have covered me completely. I have found the sweetest consolation since I made it my whole purpose to enjoy His marvelous presence. For the execution of the journey to the Indies, I did not make use of intelligence,*

*mathematics, or maps, it is simply the fulfillment of what Isaiah had prophesied. No one should fear to undertake any task in the name of our Savior, if it is just and if the intention is purely for His own service. The working out of all things has been assigned to each person by our Lord, but it all happens according to His sovereign will. And then day by day, moment by moment, everyone should express their most devoted gratitude to Him."*

This was a testimony that he believed God had given him a special calling. His journal quote from Isa 49:1-6 meant something special for him personally: *"Listen to Me, O islands, and pay attention, you peoples from afar. The Lord called Me from the womb; from the body of My mother He named Me. And He has made My mouth like a sharp sword; in the shadow of His hand He has concealed Me, and He has also made Me a select arrow; He has hidden Me in His quiver. And He said to Me, 'You are My Servant, Israel, in whom I will show My glory.' But I said, 'I have toiled in vain, I have spent My strength for nothing and vanity; yet surely the justice due to Me is with the Lord, and my reward with my God.' And now says the Lord, who formed Me from the womb to be His Servant, to bring Jacob back to Him, in order that Israel might be gathered to Him (for I am honored in the sight of the Lord, and My God is My strength), He says, 'It is too small a thing that you should be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved ones of Israel; I will also make you a light of the nations so that my salvation may reach to the end of the earth.'"*

It is intriguing to realize that God was using the discovery of America to become a haven for His people, the Jews. This, of course, is another reason why those involved in anti-Semitism hate our nation. Christopher Columbus had for his motivation not the technology of his day, but the Biblical view of the scriptures and his spiritual faith in the Bible. Columbus was more driven by prophecy than he was by astronomy. He compiled a collection of Biblical passages in his *Book of Prophecies*.

Columbus was funded by Spaniards, and at that time, Jews in Spain had become the target of religious persecution. Many were forced to renounce Judaism and embrace Catholicism under force. These were known as *converses*, or "converts." There were others called *muraros*, who faked conversion, practicing Catholicism outwardly, while remaining Jews inwardly. *Muraros* has two meanings in Spanish—the damned and the swine. The Spanish Inquisition, with all its evil and doctrines of demons (1Ti 4:1), viciously punished anyone who did conform to their religious expectancies and their own doctrinal beliefs. The introduction of the Inquisition was motivated by the greed of King Ferdinand, who attempted to seize all the power and wealth in Spain, particularly from the Jewish people. Once again, God had a plan of escape for His people; as Psa 76:10 says, *"For the wrath of man shall praise Thee."* In Gen 50:20, Joseph said to his brothers (after they had sold him into slavery), *"And as for you, you meant evil against me, but God meant it for good in order to bring about this present result, to preserve many people alive."* God even uses the wickedness of man to further His plan.

*Deu 23:5 The Lord your God turned the curse into a blessing for you because the Lord your God loves you.*

*Pro 16:4 The Lord has made everything for its own purpose, even the wicked for the day of evil.*

In 1487 the pope passed a law used as an instrument for greed and political conformity, and four years later, tens of thousands of Jews were suffering under the Spanish Inquisition. In less than 12 years, the Inquisition had condemned no less than 13,000 men and women who had continued to practice Judaism in secret. They were tortured in *La Casa Santa*, the so-called "holy houses," and burned alive at the stake, while their property was divided between the pope and the king. The rest of them were expelled from Spain on March 31, 1492, when the Edict of Expulsion was signed.

In God's timing, on August 3, 1492, before midnight (the deadline for the Jews to leave the country) Columbus and his crew (which was largely Jewish) boarded their vessels and set sail a half hour before sunrise on their now famous voyage. When Columbus finally set foot on the new land, he

christened it "*San Salvador*," which means "the Holy Savior." His log book entry reads as follows: "*Oh Lord Almighty and everlasting God, by thy Holy Word thou hast created the heavens and the earth and the sea, blessed and glorified be thy name, and praise be thy majesty which has deigned to use us, thy humble servants, that thy Holy name might be proclaimed in this second part of the earth.*"

Many scholars even believe that Columbus was Jewish because he enclosed peculiar dates and phrases unique to the Hebrew people in his writings. For example, instead of referring to the destruction and fall of Jerusalem, he used the phrase "*the destruction of the second House*." He also employed the Hebrew reckoning of A.D. 68 rather than A.D. 70. He boasted that he was related to King David, and some of his letters were described as written in an unknown script, presumably Hebrew. He is said to have used a unique triangular signature, similar to the inscriptions found on gravestones in ancient Jewish cemeteries in Spain. In the final analysis, his ethnic background is not an important issue, but rather, as is ultimately true for every one of us, his spiritual condition was what mattered. The word of God instructs us to seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness and all things will be added to us (Mat 6:33). In this regard, Columbus wrote, "*No one should fear to undertake any task in the name of our Savior, if it is just and if the intention is purely for His service.*"

Just as a man's life does not consist in the abundance of the things he possesses, so Columbus' greatness does not come from his discovery of America, but from his relationship with God through Jesus Christ. This brings us to a question we all must ask: "Where do we stand with regards to our values?" It is about the respect for Jesus Christ.

Looking at the birth of this nation, it is very hard for us to imagine the needs and the poverty of those travelers establishing settlements here on this strange land. But in the Plymouth colony, the turning point took place one Friday in the middle of March, 1621. Imagine Captain Standish and the men at the Common House, when an Indian, wearing nothing but a loincloth, strolled up the main street of the village, and to their startled faces, said in flawless English, "Welcome!" The story he told them caused them to thank God for protecting them in ways they had known nothing about. As it turned out, the region in which they had settled had always been the territory of the Pawtuxets, a large hostile tribe, that barbarously murdered every white man that had ever landed on their shores. However, four years prior to the Pilgrims' arrival, a mysterious plague had killed every man, woman, and child among them. So complete was the devastation that neighboring tribes had shunned the area every since, convinced that some supernatural spirit had destroyed the Pawtuxets. The land had been completely cleared of enemies before the Pilgrims came.

This was no mere coincidence but rather the providence of God. Providence is the divine outworking of all the divine decrees, the object being the final manifestation of God's glory. The decrees are what God has allowed to happen throughout history. The doctrine of providence expresses the fact that the world and our lives are not ruled by chance, fate, or luck, but by God. Providence includes God's *forethought*, that is, His omniscience and His care over all creatures both good and bad, but especially those who are yielded to His will.

The Holy Spirit under the providence of God has several ministries. One of the most overlooked ministries of the Spirit is His *restraining* of sin and evil in the world. In fact, were it not for this ministry of restraint, the human race would self-destruct. Anything that might destroy the human race is restrained by the providence of God. The providence of God protects the human race from self-destruction through divine judgment of individuals, groups, nations, and organizations that are evil, as in the Flood of the days of Noah.

The Apostle Paul had providential perception, the spiritual discernment concerning the providence of God. He knew that God is going to accomplish three main goals:

1. Maximum glorification for Himself, Rev 4:11, Isa 43:21.
2. The resolution of an immense invisible struggle that began before the human race in the angelic conflict, 1Co 15:24-25.

3. The highest and the best for His elected ones in the human race, 2Pe 1:10-11.

This is the spiritual discernment that we all need as we observe events taking place in our lives. Providence is the activity of God's divine essence in history, by which all the details of the divine will and purpose of God are executed.

Under this principle, God never violates any of His creatures' volition in bringing His purpose to its full manifestation and its final end. Providence reveals God's care and protection for all of humanity with special regard to believers. Providence also includes the divine control of history, and that is a comforting truth in itself. It is more amazing to realize, not just what God *permits* to happen in history, but what He *prevents* from happening in history. If people only knew what *could* be happening, they would stop asking, "Why, God?" and start thanking Him for restraining all the evil that would be infinitely worse. We must never forget to be thankful for the providence of God.

# PERSECUTION AND A SUBTLE ATTACK ON THE GOSPEL

Romans 9:30-10:4

12/07/03

*Rev 12:13 And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down violently to the earth, he persecuted the woman [the nation Israel] who gave birth to the male child [the Lord Jesus Christ].”*

Before anyone seriously considers following the Lord Jesus Christ, they must be willing to handle persecution. Very few believers are willing to do so; in fact, there are very few pastor-teachers today who are willing to go through what the Apostle Paul went through for the cause of Christ.

When God is able to bless a believer on earth, it is even greater than what He did for Adam and the woman in the garden. Blessing in time is parlayed into blessing in eternity because of the believer’s willingness to suffer persecution for the cause of Christ. The only way God can bless you in the devil’s world is for you to reach spiritual maturity. Therefore, the kingdom of darkness will do what it takes to stop your momentum in the spiritual life, as in Heb 10:38. We must understand the distractions we face, because there is a legitimate amount of persecution that a believer must go through if he is going to glorify God, Rom 8:17. The world is not going to recognize a believer who is doing his best to live the spiritual life, Luk 16:10-15. The world, those under the influence of human viewpoint, are not going to be winner-believers. The world did not even recognize the Lord Jesus Christ when He came, Joh 1:10. If the world did not recognize the Lord Jesus Christ, the world will not recognize His disciples.

Eph 3:10 illustrates what is involved with the subject of persecution: *“For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus for the sake of you Gentiles, if indeed you have heard of the stewardship of God’s grace which was given to me for you; that by revelation there was made known to me the mystery, as I wrote before in brief. And by referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ, which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets in the Spirit; to be specific, that the Gentiles are fellow heirs and fellow members of the body, and fellow partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel, of which I was made a minister, according to the gift of God’s grace which was given to me according to the working of His power. To me, the very least of all saints, this grace was given, to preach to the Gentiles the unfathomable riches of Christ, and to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery which for ages has been hidden in God, who created all things; in order that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the rulers and the authorities in the heavenly places.”* Imagine this new church at Ephesus where common people received the gift of salvation and began to walk in this new faith. They heard about their inheritance, liberation, power, and authority in Christ. Many of them were slaves themselves, and they embraced a message of hope and justice. However, there was one problem—the earthly overseer of this “Christian” movement was in Rome in prison. Therefore, in his epistle to the Ephesians, Paul pauses and reverses the normal way of looking at this issue of persecution; rather than saying, “pray for my release,” or “pray that I may endure this horrible injustice,” Paul turns the issue around and says, “Don’t lose heart—persecution means glory.”

Paul spent a lot of time in prison after his conversion to Christianity, and this may have been an embarrassment or point of contention for some of the church members. Prison scares us because it restricts our physical freedom; we must constantly face the reality of our situation when we are confined. Paul is writing to the churches from prison, and he clarifies that he is not a common criminal, but a “prisoner of Christ” and is where God needs him to be. He was in prison because he spoke the truth; however, he was also imprisoned because he compromised his doctrinal convictions; he had a major setback in which he fell into reversionism. In A.D. 58, in a moment of emotional irrationality, Paul made a sentimental journey to Jerusalem, contrary to the will of God, and offered a

legalistic vow in the Temple, hoping for a better reception of the Gospel among the Jews. He now takes the time in this epistle to explain (but not defend) his predicament in terms of God's plan. He does so without complaining or even praying for an end to his imprisonment.

Paul was absolutely sure of the message that he was preaching and that the Lord had called him to be a pastor and apostle. Rather than being popular, Paul chose to be truthful. This is a choice we all must make, because we will be persecuted when we speak the truth and live in the truth. God revealed a mystery to Paul and commissioned him to preach that mystery to the world (as in Eph 2:11-16, 3:6). Paul stood up for this truth that was beyond his comprehension and was put in prison as a result of his faith. He could have preached one message to the Jews and another message to the Gentiles, and satisfied both while inciting neither one. But he recognized that the church is built on the teaching of the apostles, and that as an apostle he was required to speak the truth (Eph 2:19-20).

When the world system hates you enough, you will begin to experience persecution, Joh 15:18-20, *"If the world [those under the influence of worldly viewpoint] hates you [lightly esteems your viewpoint], you know that it has hated Me before it hated you, but if you were of the world, then the world would love its own, but because you are not of the world, it hates you. Remember the word that I said to you, a slave is not greater than his master, if they persecuted me, they will also persecute you."* The world either loves or hates; there is no neutral ground.

In Rev 12:13 we now have two eschatology's—the eschatology of *the Devil's desperation* and the eschatology of *the Lord's tactical victory*; one eschatology leads into the other. Eschatology is the study of future things, the branch of theology concerning the final events of human history. The Devil's desperation begins with his expulsion from heaven, Rev 12:9-13. Satan no longer has any access to heaven, and he falls to the earth, where he will now express all his evil. The eschatology of our Lord's victory begins with His triumphant return to earth, Rev 19:11-16.

The Lord comes to the earth because He has a purpose in doing so. He is in control, He has the power, and He has made all the right decisions. Satan has made all the wrong decisions, and when he is tossed to the earth, he is frustrated and angry, and he "pulls the pin of the grenade," destroying everything in his path. The eschatology of the Devil's desperation ends at the Second Advent, Rev 20:1-3. The eschatology of the Lord's tactical victory ends at the Gog Revolution, Rev 20:7-10. Satan comes back after being in jail for 1,000 years and he has not learned anything; the arrogant are always unteachable and cannot learn anything worthwhile. Satan has learned nothing. To the extent that you entertain any form of arrogance in your life, you can only learn truth the hard way.

Our Lord returns to the earth and brings great happiness with Him; when He ultimately puts Satan down at the end of human history, that happiness lasts forever. In the eschatology of the Devil's desperation we see his confinement to the earth for 3½ years, Rev 12:9-13, and he accelerates the use of his unchecked power to produce the greatest disaster in human history. In the eschatology of the Lord's tactical victory, Satan is confined again, this time to the abyss for 1,000 years, Rev 20:1-3. The eschatology of the Devil's desperation is a series of confinements, which terminates with Satan spending eternity in the lake of fire. No creature, man or angel, has ever profited from arrogance, and ever will.

The final phrase in Rev 12:13 reads, *"...he persecuted the woman [Israel] who gave birth to the male child [the Lord Jesus Christ]."* The first great client nation to God, the nation of Israel, lost its freedom on three occasions, with the administration of the fifth cycle of discipline. The Jews rejected the sign of the virgin birth, and rejected Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. No one can reject the Lord Jesus Christ as the Messiah and ever have eternal life, Rom 10:9-10, Act 4:12. When enough people make decisions from a position of weakness, it means loss of freedom for a national entity. For the Jews, their loss of freedom came every time they rejected Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. The Jews must fulfill the principle found in Rom 10:9-10, *"That if you confess with your mouth Jesus as Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you shall be saved; for with the heart*



*man believes, resulting in righteousness, and with the mouth he confesses, resulting in salvation.*" Paul, the apostle to the Gentiles, pauses in the middle of *Romans*, in chapters 9-11, to explain what happened to the Jews in previous dispensations, and relate it to the evangelism of the Jews in the time in which we live.

One of the more subtle forms of attack on the Gospel is the teaching that you have to publicly confess Christ. This is taken from Rom 10:9-10, and the problem, as usual, is ignorance of the original language and isagogics. We first have to note the background and context for this passage. We begin at Rom 9:30, *"What shall we say then? That Gentiles, who did not pursue righteousness, attained righteousness, even the righteousness which is by faith..."* This is where the passage really begins; Paul has been discussing the problem of the Jews. Though he was an apostle to the Gentiles, and a Roman citizen, this did not keep him from expressing his concern and his love for the Jews. This verse is a reference to salvation in the Old Testament as taught in Gen 15:6 and quoted in Rom 4:3, *"Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness."* The phrase "by faith" indicates that salvation throughout human history occurred one way only—by personal faith in Jesus Christ. The Jews were trying to attain salvation through the Mosaic Law because they had rejected Christ as Savior. Rom 9:31-32 continues, *"But Israel, pursuing a law of righteousness [who strived for a righteousness with reference to the Law], did not arrive at that law [has not attained that Law]. Why? Because they did not pursue it by faith, but as though it were by works. They stumbled over the stumbling stone."* Israel did not accomplish the true purpose of the Mosaic Law, which was to be an instructor to bring us to Christ, Gal 3:24-25. Salvation has always been, and will always be, by means of faith, *never by means of works.*

Throughout this passage we see scripture after scripture being quoted from the Old Testament. The Jews in Paul's day on every Sabbath would confess *adonay* as Lord, but they did not equate *adonay* with Jesus. As unbelievers, they would say, *"adonay elohenu adonay echad"* ("the Lord is our God, the Lord is one"); they were trying to worship *adonay*, the Lord, when they had already rejected their Lord—Jesus Christ. This is what Paul was dealing with at the time that he wrote this. They were going into the synagogue and repeating this as a part of their ritual, confessing as unbelievers that God is Lord, but they would not equate "Lord" with the Lord Jesus Christ. This is still happening in Jewish synagogues today. This is the whole story of *Romans* chapters 9-11.

Even though there is a nation called Israel today, it is not a client nation to God, nor can it ever be again, until the Lord Jesus Christ comes back. This is the time of their dispersion, and we are about to study one of the greatest tragedies that will come their way in the book of Revelation. God used signs throughout the Bible to speak to the Jews, 1Co 1:22, *"For indeed Jews ask for signs, and Greeks search for wisdom."* Many signs were given to the Jews, but they rejected every one.

Circumcision was a sign to the Jews that they are a new race, Gen 17:10-11, Rom 4:11. The Passover was given as a sign of the Cross, Exo 12:7-13. The Sabbath was given as a sign of the rest given to God's people, Exo 31:13-17, Eze 20:12. Bible doctrine, the word of God, was given to the Jews as sign, Deu 6:4-8. The most important sign of all is found in Isa 7:14, the sign of the virgin birth: *"Behold, a virgin will be with child and bear a son, and she will call His name Immanuel."* The sign of the Cross itself is recorded in Joh 2:18-21. Finally, the sign of His death, burial, and resurrection took place in Mat 12:39-41, 16:4; Joh 2:19. The Jews have already been given enough signs, Mat 12:39-40, *"But He answered and said to them, 'An evil and adulterous generation craves for a sign; and yet no sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet; for just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster, so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.'" The Jews demanded a sign, so our Lord said, "No sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet [a type of His death, burial, and resurrection]."*

This was contrary to what the legalistic, religious Jews had taught for many years, and this is why they were put under divine discipline as a nation, and why they go through such terrible

holocausts. They had been assigned the responsibility for the formation, preservation, communication, and fulfillment of the canon of Scripture, and they rejected this responsibility. Rom 9:32 goes on to say (quoting from Isa 8:14), *“They stumbled over the stumbling stone”*; the “stumbling stone” is Jesus Christ. Paul continues in Rom 9:33, *“Just as it is written [Isa 28:16], ‘Behold, I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense [the Lord Jesus Christ in His hypostatic union], and he who believes in Him will not be disappointed.’”* This is a summary of the attitude toward Jesus Christ during the dispensation of the hypostatic union. Jesus Christ was the rock that caused the self-righteous to stumble and aroused their opposition.

In Rom 10:1, we see the great burden in Paul’s life: “Brethren, my heart’s desire and my prayer to God for them is for their salvation.” Paul’s “heart’s desire” is for the salvation of the Jews; he was the apostle to the Gentiles, but he never stopped praying for Israel. In Rom 10:2-3 he states, “For I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God, but not in accordance with knowledge [they are inaccurate in their doctrine]. For not knowing about God’s righteousness, and seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God.” The first Jew, Abraham, knew all about the righteousness of God, Gen 15:6, “Abraham believed in the Lord and it was credited to his account for righteousness.” Anyone who adds something to faith in Jesus Christ is in a state of arrogance. They are trying to help God, and salvation cannot be earned or deserved; it is a grace gift from God. The ultimate of human arrogance is ignorance of the righteousness of God and seeking to establish one’s own righteousness. They were producing a human righteousness and a morality by attempting to keep the Law. By not being “obedient to the righteousness of God,” they had refused to believe.

Rom 10:4 is Paul’s great statement about our Lord and what He accomplished: “For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness to everyone who believes.” Christ is the end of the Law because He fulfilled the Law perfectly. As far as righteousness is concerned, Christ is the termination of the Law and any system of human self-righteousness. What the Law could not provide, the Lord Jesus Christ provided. He provides the righteousness based on God’s grace in response to faith. Even in the Old Testament, no one was saved by human works and righteousness.

In every dispensation, God’s policy of grace always excludes human self-righteousness and any form of human good for salvation. Under God’s grace plan, He provides His own perfect righteousness for anyone who will believe in Christ. Therefore, human self-righteousness is rejected. Salvation is always the same—faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, as He is revealed in any given dispensation. The unbelievers in the dispensation of Israel were blinded by their own arrogance, human works, self-achievement, and self-righteousness in keeping the Law. Human self-righteousness cannot be added to faith, and it cannot improve on the perfect imputed righteousness of God, which we receive the moment we believe in Jesus Christ. After salvation, only God the Holy Spirit controlling the life of the believer can produce a virtue and experiential righteousness, revealed as “justification by works” in the Bible. For eternal salvation, the only way you accept the righteousness of Christ is simply to believe in Him, and His righteousness is freely imputed to you. You now possess the very righteousness of God, and you are justified and eternally secure forever.

# PERSECUTION AND A SUBTLE ATTACK ON THE GOSPEL, PART 2

Romans 7:4-8:4

12/14/03

*Revelation 12:13 And when the dragon saw that he was thrown down violently to the earth, he persecuted the woman [the nation Israel] who gave birth to the male child [the Lord Jesus Christ].*

The Jews were responsible, as a client nation to God, for the formation, preservation, communication, and fulfillment of the canon of Scripture. The reason they have suffered so much persecution is that they have rejected this responsibility. They rejected the sign of the virgin birth, which means they rejected Jesus Christ as their personal Savior.

The Jews must fulfill the principle found in Rom 10:9 *“that if you confess with your mouth Jesus as Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you shall be saved.”* One of the most subtle attacks on the Gospel is the *pseudo-salvation* of publicly confessing Christ, which is a distortion of Rom 10:9-10. The background here is Paul’s great burden for the Jews, Rom 10:1, *“Brethren, my heart’s desire and my prayer to God for them [the Jews] is for their salvation.”* We can pray for the unsaved, however, our prayers cannot save them; only the Lord Jesus Christ and their positive volition can accomplish that, Rom 10:2-3, *“For I bear them [the Jews] witness that they have a zeal for God, but not in accordance with knowledge [metabolized doctrine]. For not knowing about God’s righteousness, and seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God.”* Anyone who adds something to faith in Jesus Christ is in a state of arrogance. Salvation is a gift from God and God does not need our help; we cannot work for it or earn it because it is all by grace.

In Rom 10:3 we see the ultimate of human arrogance—ignorance of the righteousness of God and seeking to establish one’s righteousness. The Apostle Paul makes his point magnificently in Rom 10:4, *“For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness to everyone who believes.”* Christ is the end of the Law because he fulfilled the Law perfectly. As far as righteousness is concerned, Christ is the termination of the Law and any system of human self-righteousness. What the Law could not provide, the Lord Jesus Christ provided. The Law could not provide righteousness based on merit; on the other hand, Christ provides the righteousness based on God’s grace in response to faith. Salvation is always the same—faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, as He is revealed in each dispensation.

You cannot even begin to experience the “Lordship of Christ” until you have learned enough doctrine under the filling of the Spirit. After salvation, the ministry of God the Holy Spirit produces a virtue far superior to any form of human righteousness or morality. The imputation of divine righteousness at the moment of salvation through faith in Christ replaces any system of human self-righteousness, pseudo-spirituality, or legalism.

The unbeliever cannot establish two conflicting systems of righteousness in his life. Either he will accept his own self-righteousness for salvation, or he will accept the righteousness of Christ. In salvation, the conflict is between *human works righteousness* (salvation by works) and *God’s righteousness* (salvation by grace through faith in the Lord Jesus Christ). After salvation, the conflict is between *spirituality by works* (legalism) and *spirituality by grace*.

The reason behind the Jews’ persecution throughout history is found in passages such as Isa 53:2-3 and Joh 1:11, *“He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him.”* They were given the responsibility of constructing, preserving, and communicating the canon of Scripture, but they ignored their responsibility. Rom 10 illustrates this principle magnificently. Christ is the “end of the law” in Rom 10:4 because He fulfilled the law inside the predesigned plan of God, remaining

impeccable even while bearing our sins on the Cross, Mat 5:17-18, *“Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill. For truly I say to you, until heaven and earth pass away, not the smallest letter or stroke shall pass away from the Law, until all is accomplished.”*

The Mosaic Law is divided into three parts—Codices 1, 2, and 3. In the English translation they are called the Decalogue (Codex 1), the Ordinances (Codex 2), and the Judgments (Codex 3). Codex 1 is the Decalogue, or the freedom code, commonly called the Ten Commandments, and forms the basis for the heritage of Israel’s freedom. There can be no freedom without morality, which can be fulfilled by both believers and unbelievers. The Ten Commandments define human freedom in terms of morality, privacy, property, life, and authority in general. While a few sins are mentioned in the Ten Commandments, their purpose is not to define sin. The sins mentioned are intrusions upon privacy, property, and freedom.

Codex 2 is the spiritual code, Exo 25:1, 31:18. This emphasizes the principle that believers are designed to function under the laws of divine establishment as well as Bible doctrine in the soul. These ordinances are the spiritual heritage of Israel, the theological code designed to present Jesus Christ as the only Savior. This includes a complete “shadow” *soteriology* and *Christology*, essence of God, explanation of justification in terms of divine integrity, and adjustments to the justice of God. These doctrines were communicated through ritual and oral teachings. The ritual communication included the structure of the Tabernacle (Exo 25-27), the delineation of the Holy Days (Lev 23:10ff), the proper function of the Levitical priesthood (Exo 28-29), and the significance of the Levitical offerings (Lev 1-3). All these principles spoke of the person and work of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Codex 3 is the establishment code, the national heritage of Israel. This covers the entire political and functional heritage of the nation, and includes every principle related to the function of a client nation to God, such as freedom and authority, privacy, rights, property, privileges, marriage and divorce, military policy, taxation, diet, health, sanitation, quarantine, criminal law, trial, punishment, laws of evidence, and capital punishment, Exo 21:1-23:9. These laws of divine establishment are for believer and unbeliever alike. Morality mandated by the Mosaic Law was for both believers and unbelievers; it was not the means of spirituality. Spirituality is infinitely greater than morality. Morality is produced by human self-determination and is positive and beneficial, but spirituality is produced by God the Holy Spirit and is infinitely greater than human good. Codex 2 presented the Gospel, which the Jews had to believe for salvation, but the Law itself was never a way of salvation. And Christ fulfilled all the principles in Codex 2, for example, in reference to the feasts, *“Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us.”*

Christ is the “end of the law” because he abrogated [annulled, voided] the Law as a way of salvation. However, rather than realizing that Christ fulfilled Codex 2, the Jews chose Codices 1 and 3, the establishment and morality codes, as the means of working for their salvation. They tried to be saved by their own self-righteousness. Keeping the Law produces moral self-righteousness, which is often parlayed into a system of arrogant legalism, and keeping the Law never provided salvation for the Jews or anyone else, Rom 3:20, *“Therefore, by the works of the Law no flesh shall be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin.”* All that the law could do for us was to reveal our sin and our need for the Lord Jesus Christ, Rom 3:28, *“We conclude, therefore, that a man is justified by faith totally apart from the works of the Law”*; Gal 3:24, *“Therefore the Law has become our tutor to lead us to Christ, that we may be justified by faith.”*

We can learn about our sinfulness from the Law and how Christ was judged for our sins. However, we cannot keep the Law and be saved by morality. Jesus Christ is the termination of any system of human self-righteousness because faith in Him results in the imputation of divine righteousness at the moment of salvation. No system of human self-righteousness can compete with God’s perfect righteousness. The unbelievers in the dispensation of Israel were blinded by their

arrogance of self-achievement and self-righteousness by keeping the Law. And to this day this is the problem with many Jews.

God the Father is not impressed with any human righteousness; He is impressed only with the salvation work of Jesus Christ; this is the doctrine of *propitiation*. God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the Cross and imputes His own righteousness to anyone who simply believes in Jesus Christ. The imputed righteousness of God is the foundation for building a system of virtue based on grace, which is mutually exclusive to self-righteousness.

Rom 10:5 begins to distinguish between works righteousness and faith righteousness: *“For Moses writes [in Lev 18:5], that the man who practices the righteousness which is based on law shall live by that righteousness.”* The one who thinks that practicing righteousness makes him righteous shall live by that righteousness—he takes his chances in his own righteousness, and he ends up unrighteous, because the only way of salvation in any dispensation is faith in Jesus Christ. Paul is saying, “If you try to be saved by keeping the Law, you must accept the consequences.”

There are many questions about the Law that need to be answered:

1. Why was the Law given? The answer: Rom 3:19, “Now we know that whatever the Law says, it speaks to those who are under the Law [here is why the Law was originally given], that every mouth may be closed, and all the world may become accountable to God.” The Law was given so that all the human race would have to close their mouths, and never be able to boast in their own righteousness, Phi 2:10 “In order that at the title of Jesus every knee of the heavens should bow, and on earth, and under the earth.”
2. Can any member of the human race be justified before God by following the Mosaic Law? The answer: Rom 3:20, “Because by the works of the Law no flesh will be justified in His sight; for through the Law comes the knowledge of sin.” The Law was given so that we would know what sin is.
3. How can a person then be justified before God if he cannot be justified by following the commandments or the Law? The answer: Rom 3:28, “For we maintain that a man is justified by faith apart from works of the Law.”
4. What was the purpose of the Law? The answer: Rom 4:15, “For the Law brings about wrath, but where there is no law, neither is there violation.” However, in Rom 5:8-9, “But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him.”
5. How does the Law relate to sin and transgressions? The answer: Rom 5:20-21, “And the Law came in that the transgression might increase; but where sin increased, grace abounded all the more, that, as sin reigned in death, even so grace might reign through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.” In other words, God gave man a perfect set of rules, which man could not follow, so that God could reveal that only He is holy, just, and perfect, and that He is the God of all grace.
6. What relationship does the believer have with the Law? The answer is given in Paul’s great dissertation in Rom 7:4-8:4, “Therefore, my brethren, you also were made to die to the Law through the body of Christ, that you might be joined to another, to Him who was raised from the dead, that we might bear fruit for God. For while we were in the flesh, the sinful passions, which were aroused by the Law, were at work in the members of our body to bear fruit for death. [The Law exposed our sinful passions and revealed to us how sinful we are in the eyes of God, our Creator.] But now we have been released from the Law, having died to that by which we were bound, so that we serve in newness of the Spirit and not in oldness of the letter [the Law].

What shall we say then? Is the Law sin? May it never be! On the contrary, I would not have come to know sin except through the Law; for I would not have known about coveting if the Law had not said, "You shall not covet." But sin, taking opportunity through the commandment, produced in me coveting of every kind; for apart from the Law sin is dead. And I was once alive apart from the Law; but when the commandment came, sin became alive, and I died; and this commandment, which was to result in life, proved to result in death for me; for sin, taking opportunity through the commandment, deceived me, and through it killed me. So then, the Law is holy, and the commandment is holy and righteous and good. Therefore did that which is good become a cause of death for me? May it never be! Rather it was sin, in order that it might be shown to be sin by effecting my death through that which is good, that through the commandment sin might become utterly sinful. For we know that the Law is spiritual; but I am of flesh, sold into bondage to sin. For that which I am doing, I do not understand; for I am not practicing what I would like to do, but I am doing the very thing I hate. But if I do the very thing I do not wish to do, I agree with the Law, confessing that it is good. So now, no longer am I the one doing it, but sin which indwells me. For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh; for the wishing is present in me, but the doing of the good is not. For the good that I wish, I do not do; but I practice the very evil that I do not wish. But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me. I find then the principle that evil is present in me, the one who wishes to do good. For I joyfully concur with the law of God in the inner man, but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind, and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members. Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin.

There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death. For what the Law could not do, weak as it was through the flesh, God did: sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and as an offering for sin, He condemned sin in the flesh, in order that the requirement of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

7. Is following the Law the Christian way of life after salvation? The answer: Gal 3:10-13, "For as many as are of the works of the Law are under a curse; for it is written, 'Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book of the law, to perform them.' Now that no one is justified by the Law before God is evident; for, 'The righteous man shall live by faith.' However, the Law is not of faith; on the contrary, 'He who practices them shall live by them.' Christ redeemed us from the curse of the Law, having become a curse for us, for it is written, 'Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree.'"
8. Who was the Mosaic Law given to? The Mosaic Law was given to Israel as the first client nation to God in 1440 B.C., Exo 19:3; Lev 26:46; Rom 3:19, 9:4.
9. Was the Law ever given to the Gentiles or the Church? The Mosaic Law was never given to Gentiles, because Israel was the client nation, Rom 2:12-14, Deu 4:7-8, "For what great nation is there that has a god so near to it as is the Lord our God whenever we call on Him? Or what great nation is there that has statutes and judgments as righteous as this whole law which I am setting before you today?" The Mosaic Law was never given to the Church, Acts 15:5-24, Rom 6:14, Gal 2:19. We have a higher code in the Royal Family honor code. The Church has no animal sacrifices, Saturday Sabbath worship, specialized priesthood, etc.
10. What are the important principles related to the Law and grace (the spiritual life)?
  - a. The believer has died to the Law, Gal 2:19.

- b. The believer has received all the benefits of the Spirit through faith, Gal 3:1-5.
- c. The Law brings nothing but condemnation, Gal 3:10-14.
- d. The Law has no power to give life or sustain life, Gal 3:21.
- e. The Law is a bondage to the believer, Gal 4:9.
- f. Law and grace are mutually exclusive principles; therefore, you can only choose one or the other, Gal 4:21-31.
- g. The believer has an abiding freedom in Christ, Gal 5:1.
- h. The believer must keep all the Law, if he would attempt to keep even part of it, Gal 5:2-4.
- i. The persuasion to put the believer under the Law is not from God, Gal 5:8.
- j. All the Law is fulfilled by the Holy Spirit, Gal 5:16-24.
- k. The life of the believer must be sustained on the same principle as his new birth, or regeneration, Gal 5:25.
- l. All who advocate the Law for the believer cannot keep it themselves, and their intention is ultimately glory in the flesh, Gal 6:13.

# SALVATION IS NEITHER UNATTAINABLE NOR UNAVAILABLE

Rom 10:6-8

12/21/03

*Matthew 15:1-3,7-9 Then some Pharisees and scribes came to Jesus from Jerusalem, saying, "Why do Your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands when they eat bread." And He answered and said to them, "And why do you yourselves transgress the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition?... He said "You hypocrites, rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, this people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men."*

Our Lord also said in Mar 7:8, "Neglecting the commandment of God, you hold to the tradition of men," and the Apostle Paul wrote in Col 2:8, "See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception, according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary principles of the world, rather than according to Christ." Our Lord dealt with this principle many times throughout the Bible. You may think your spiritual life is blossoming, while you are still in bondage to tradition. A simple illustration of how easy it is to fall into bondage with tradition, rather than the true meaning of the holiday, is our current-day Christmas season. We should glorify God by teaching our children about Jesus Christ and His saving grace, because that is the real meaning of this holiday, not the absurd fantasy of Santa Claus. No person can reject the Lord Jesus Christ as the Messiah and ever have eternal life, Rom 10:9-10, Act 4:12.

Paul, the apostle to the Gentiles, took time out in the middle of the book of Romans, in chapters 9, 10, and 11, to explain what happened to the Jews in previous dispensations, Rom 9:30-33, "*What shall we say then? That Gentiles, who did not pursue righteousness [the righteousness of God], attained righteousness, even the righteousness which is by faith; but Israel, pursuing a law of righteousness [who strived for a righteousness with reference to the Law], did not arrive at that law. Why? Because they did not pursue it by means of faith, but as though it were by works. They stumbled over the stumbling stone. Just as it is written [in Isa 28:16], 'Behold, I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense [the Lord Jesus Christ in His hypostatic union], and he who believes in Him will not be disappointed [humiliated].'*" The background to this passage is Paul's great burden for the Jews, his desperate desire for their salvation.

He goes on in Rom 10:1-4, "Brethren, my heart's desire and my prayer to God for them [the Jews] is for their salvation. For I bear them witness that they have a zeal for God, but not in accordance with knowledge. For not knowing about God's righteousness, and seeking to establish their own, they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousness to everyone who believes." Every person who adds other requirements to faith in Jesus Christ is in a state of arrogance because they are trying to help God! However, salvation is a grace gift from God; we cannot work for it, nor do we earn or deserve it. Christ is the end of the Law because He fulfilled the Law perfectly. However, rather than realizing this, the Jews chose to teach tradition and the Mosaic Law as a means of salvation and the spiritual life.

Paul's message of grace is in sharp contrast to the lifestyle of *works righteousness* being propagated by the Judaizers. Lifestyle is not the basis for salvation, but only instant faith in Jesus Christ, and arrogance distorts one's *lifestyle* into a way of salvation, Eph 2:8-9, "*For by grace are you saved through faith, and that [salvation] not from yourselves; it is a gift of God, not of works lest any man should boast.*" No lifestyle, including "semi-perfection" based on morality, can open the gates of heaven for eternal life nor provide any real happiness in this life.



Paul is directly addressing the situation of the Jews here, and we now see a series of quotes from the Old Testament, the Jewish Torah. We see Rom 10:6 quoting Deu 30:12, Rom 10:7 quoting Amo 9:2, and Rom 10:8 quoting Deu 30:14. These three quotes will explain Paul's unique and unusual statement in Rom 10:9. One of the greatest problems that Christians face in understanding the Church-age is understanding the early part of the dispensation of the Church-age and what happened to the Jews. This is what the book of *Acts* is all about, and it is considered a *transitional* book, taking us from one dispensation to another. Many of these Jews were alive when our Lord was on earth; they had seen the dispensation of the Hypostatic Union where they rejected Christ, and they continued to reject Him. In fact, Paul's great ministry was constantly under attack from the Judaizers, the Jewish scholars who followed him everywhere to discredit him. They would attack his converts by enforcing legalism on them, and Paul addresses this issue with quotes from the Old Testament:

- 10:6, quoting Deu 30:12 ("You don't have to go to heaven to get the Gospel, it's on the earth.")
- Rom 10:7, quoting Rom Amos 9:2 ("You don't have to die and go to Hades to get the Gospel, it's on the earth.")
- Rom 10:8, quoting Deu 30:14 ("The word is near to you, in your mouth and in your heart.")

So Rom 10:6, 10:7, and 10:8 all quote the Old Testament, and after studying these verses, we will understand Rom 10:9, where Paul says, "If you confess with your mouth Jesus as Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you shall be saved." If a Jew said, "Iesous sou Kurios" (Jesus as your Lord, or Jesus as your Yahweh) and confessed that Jesus is Lord, he would be affirming the deity of the Lord Jesus Christ. He would be saying in effect that Jesus is Jehovah. This is the reason why Paul, who habitually teaches "salvation by grace through faith" throughout all his epistles, would suddenly throw in "confessing with the mouth, and believing with the heart." Why would he suddenly seemingly complicate salvation, which is so simple? Paul is dealing specifically with the Jews and their unique situation, as they rejected the Messiah but still proclaimed, "the Lord is our God, the Lord is one" (Adonay elohanu, Adonai echad) in the Temple; he is not talking "faith plus commitment" or "lordship salvation." Paul is deeply concerned about their salvation and about the divine discipline that they are facing.

In order to understand our context, we have to go back to Deu 30:10-14, "If you obey the Lord your God to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the Law, if you turn to the Lord your God with all your heart and soul. For this commandment which I command you today is not too difficult for you, nor is it out of reach. It is not in heaven, that you should say, 'Who will go up to heaven for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?' Nor is it beyond the sea, that you should say, 'Who will cross the sea for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?' But the word is very near you, in your mouth and in your heart, that you may observe it." This is the passage Paul translated into Greek in Rom 10 to show the Jews their problem.

Deu 30:10 says, "If you obey [shama, listen to] the Lord your God [the Lord Jesus Christ]... [the first "if"], if you turn to the Lord your God with all your heart and soul [the second "if"]..." We are talking about salvation here; we know this from the word "turn," the Hebrew verb *jashub*, which means to make a complete about-face or to be converted. In this verse we have two factors; first, if you are going to execute God's plan as a believer (the first "if"), and second, if you turn to the Lord your God with all your heart and soul (the second "if," referring to salvation). Salvation is mentioned second, but obviously it must come first. This is a normal Hebrew reverse order, used to show that one principle is predicated on another—you cannot (1) live the Christian way of life until you (2) become a Christian. So in Deu 30:11, Moses says, "This commandment [for salvation] which I command you today is not too difficult for you [it is not unattainable], nor is it out of reach." Salvation is not unavailable or unattainable because you do not have to depend on your own righteousness for it. You do not have to cross an ocean or go down to Hades to receive it; in fact, as Moses says, it is as

close to you as your own mouth and heart (verse 14). The way that one expressed his faith to God in the Old Testament was by saying, “Adonay elohanu, Adonai echad.”

Deu 30:12 (quoted in Rom 10:6) continues, “It is not in heaven, that you should say, ‘Who will go up to heaven for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?’” We do not have to send someone up to heaven to get the message of salvation because it’s already on the earth. Someone already came down from heaven to save us, Joh 3:31, “He who comes from above is above all, he who is of the earth is from the earth and speaks of the earth. He who comes from heaven is above all.” Deu 30:13 continues, “Nor is it [salvation] beyond the sea [the Mediterranean], that you should say, ‘Who will cross the sea for us to get it for us and make us hear it, that we may observe it?’” We would think that Paul would quote this verse next (in Rom 10:7), but he does not, for one very simple reason. The Greeks were the ones who now lived beyond the Mediterranean Sea, and they certainly did not have salvation for Jews; also, crossing the sea was easy in Paul’s day (Paul did it at least five times), and therefore “crossing the sea” would not work as an illustration for the unavailability of salvation. Therefore, in Rom 10:7, Paul quotes a different Old Testament verse, Amos 9:2, “Though they dig into Sheol, from there shall My hand take them; and though they ascend to heaven, from there will I bring them down.” In other words, you cannot go to Sheol (Hebrew) or Hades (Greek) to find salvation. Paul portrays the unavailability of the Gospel through human works with first century impossibilities. It is impossible for man to go to Hades and get the Gospel and come back. Therefore, Paul uses something that is unavailable—Hades. Paul has to eliminate “crossing the sea,” which is used in Deu 30:13, but he has to pick up the concept that Moses communicated—the concept of unavailability. By using the “Sheol” phrase of Amo 9:2 (in place of the “cross the sea” phrase of Deu 30:13), Paul makes it clear that we can not go get salvation on our own. Therefore, just as Moses had indicated, Paul taught that salvation is much closer to the Jew than heaven or Hades, making reference to our Lord’s physical death on the Cross.

Next, Deu 30:14 is quoted in Rom 10:8; in Deu 30:14 Moses stated, “*But the word [the doctrine, the message of salvation] is very near you, in your mouth and in your heart, that you may observe it [believe in Jesus Christ, the Messiah].*” Moses is saying that salvation is as close to you as your mouth and heart, which is a lot closer than heaven or Greece. In Rom 10:6 and 10:8, Paul quotes Moses from the book of *Deuteronomy* (a popular passage that most Jews had memorized), Rom 10:8, “*But what does it [the Torah, in Deu 30:14] say? ‘The word is near you, in your mouth and in your heart’—that is, the word of faith which we are preaching.*”

Rom 10:6 states emphatically, “But the righteousness based on faith speaks thus, ‘Do not say in your heart, “Who will ascend into heaven?”’ (that is, to bring Christ down).” The Jews in Paul’s day were saying that Christ was not the Savior; and that His work on the Cross was not efficacious. They were returning to the Mosaic Law as a means of attaining salvation. But Jesus Christ has already accomplished salvation on the Cross, once and for all, and He does not have to come back to do it again. This principle is also addressed in Heb 6:1-6, “Therefore leaving the elementary teaching about the Christ, let us press on to maturity, not laying again a foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, of instruction about washings, and laying on of hands, and the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And this we shall do, if God permits. For in the case of those who have once been enlightened and have tasted of the heavenly gift and have been made partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, and then have fallen away, it is impossible to renew them again to repentance, since they again crucify to themselves the Son of God, and put Him to open shame.”

Paul is saying in Rom 10:6 that in the previous dispensation of the Hypostatic Union, Jesus Christ had already come down from heaven. The Lord repeatedly presented the Gospel, and then fulfilled it by being judged for our sins on the Cross, dying physically, and then being resurrected. In Rom 10:6, we see the emergence of *faith righteousness* in contrast to *works righteousness*. Works

righteousness and faith righteousness are mutually exclusive; you can only have one or the other, Rom 11:6.

The first concept in Rom 10:6 was *unattainability* (going to heaven to get the Gospel); the gospel was unattainable for man, but *"The righteousness based on faith speaks thus, 'Do not say in your heart, 'Who will ascend into heaven?...' (that is, to bring Christ [salvation] down)."* The second concept is *unavailability* and Paul has to go to Amo 9:2, which he quotes in Rom 10:7, *"...or 'Who will descend into the abyss?' (that is, to bring Christ up from the dead)."* He goes back to the Jewish Torah to get a perfect illustration of *unavailability* to the Jew.

Paul is saying that neither the Jews nor any other individuals can do anything to earn or attain salvation. In verse 6, you can't ascend into heaven *to bring Christ down* to be saved; in verse 7, you can't descend into Hades *to bring Christ up* from the dead to be saved. Paul combines the "heaven" of Deu 30:12 and the "Hades" of Amo 9:2 to indicate the *impossibility* of attaining salvation with human ability. However, salvation as a gift is as close to the Jew as his own mouth and heart.

The *"righteousness based on faith"* in Rom 10:6 is how people have always been saved. Jesus Christ accomplished salvation on the Cross; the work is *complete*. In Rom 10:7, where we read, *"Who shall descend into the abyss (that is to bring Christ up from the dead),"* the principle is that Christ has *already* come up from the dead in His resurrection. Finally, the statement in Rom 10:8, *"The word is near you, in your mouth and in your heart"—that is, the word of faith which we are preaching,"* explains why when the altar call (an invitation to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ) is given, it includes the principle, *"In your own words, tell God that you're believing on His Son..."* or, *"In your own way, right where you're sitting, in the privacy of your own soul, forming the sentences in thoughts only, believe on the Lord Jesus Christ."* Faith alone saves you, but when you confess it (*homologeo* means to admit), you admit or acknowledge to God that you're believing in His Son, Jesus Christ. In the Old Testament, Christ was revealed as *Jehovah Elohim*, which is equivalent to *Kurios* ("Lord") in the Greek.

This is where many false doctrines come in and where legalistic preachers take Rom 10:9-10, and say you not only have to believe in Christ, but you have to make Him "Lord of all" in order to be saved. No one can make Christ "Lord of all." In fact, we do not even have the ability to make Him Lord of all. The moment that you believed, you entered into *union with Jesus Christ*, and He is your Lord, regardless of your lifestyle.

The Lord Jesus Christ is *Kurios* in the Greek, and He is also *Yahweh, Jehovah, Adonay, and Elohim* in the Hebrew. The Jews in Paul's day would verbally confess, on every Sabbath, Adonay as Lord, but they refused to believe that Adonay was Jesus Christ. Therefore, if they would only acknowledge that Adonay is Jesus Christ, they would be verbally confessing that "Jesus is Lord," as Paul says in Rom 10:9, and they would be saved! They were unbelievers saying, *"Adonay elohanu, Adonai echad,"* refusing to acknowledge that it was Jesus Himself that they were speaking of. And to this day in the synagogue on Saturday, you will hear the phrase... *"Shama, Israel, Adonay elohanu, Adonai echad."* And they will say it every Sabbath, but they will not equate it with the One who truly is *"Adonay elohanu, Adonay echad"*—"the Lord is our God, the Lord is one." Religious people can use the name of Jesus, but it can be "another Jesus," 2Co 11:3-4, *"But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ. For if one comes and preaches another Jesus whom we have not preached, or you receive a different spirit which you have not received, or a different gospel which you have not accepted, you bear this beautifully."* This is why our Lord said in Mat 7:21-23, *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven; but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven. Many will say to Me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles?' And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness.'"*

# GOD DOES HIS BEST WORK IN IMPOSSIBLE SITUATIONS

Luke 1:5-25

12/28/03

God is full of surprises. In fact, God seems to specialize in surprises, but especially the impossible. Many times we expect Him to do one thing, and He does another. We anticipate His movement in one direction, but often it is in another. Sometimes we trust Him to handle something immediately, and He waits and it seems to take forever. Then other times we anticipate waiting for a long time, and almost overnight He has solved what appeared to be the impossible. God loves to do the things that we have absolutely no power to do, and that's the way He has planned our lives. What we call impossible, God sees as no problem at all, Mat 19:26, *"With men this [insert your worst problem here] is impossible, but with God all things are possible"*; Luk 1:37, *"For nothing will be impossible with God."* "Nothing," not even the most overwhelming obstacle, will be impossible to overcome with God. These things happen exactly as God has planned. His solutions are better than what we could ever devise. And it is often more impossible than we would ever believe. We are all faced with a series of great opportunities *brilliantly disguised* as "impossible situations." Many times, believers are convinced that there is no way even God could intervene in their life, and therefore, they miss out on some of God's best work. God *prefers* to work in that situation that you deem "impossible." When we throw up our hands and say, "There is no way," God loves to prove Himself God.

We are about to study an older couple in Luk 1 who became the recipients of an "impossibility" from God; they are going to have a baby in spite of their age. Some of God's best gifts come in the form of tiny infant surprises and unexpected arrivals. They can turn an entire family around and change lives. This case in point is found in the Gospel of Luke, the wonderful story of Zacharias and Elizabeth. No one knows exactly how old they were, but they may have even been in their eighties; they were past the age of being able to conceive.

The story begins with the words of the prophet Malachi, who four centuries earlier had predicted that One would come who would be the SUN of righteousness, that there would be a "sunrise" of righteousness, and He would have "healing in his wings." He, of course, would be Messiah, Mal 4:1-6, *"For behold, the day is coming, burning like a furnace; and all the arrogant and every evildoer will be chaff; and the day that is coming will set them ablaze," says the Lord of hosts, 'so that it will leave them neither root nor branch. But for you who fear My name the sun of righteousness will rise with healing in its wings; and you will go forth and skip about like calves from the stall. And you will tread down the wicked, for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet on the day which I am preparing,' says the Lord of hosts. 'Remember the law of Moses My servant, even the statutes and ordinances which I commanded him in Horeb for all Israel. Behold, I am going to send you Elijah the prophet [John the Baptist, according to Mat 11:14] before the coming of the great and terrible day of the Lord. And he will restore the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the land with a curse."* The One called the "Sun of Righteousness," the Lord Jesus Christ, would be preceded by a forerunner with the "spirit of Elijah." This prophet that would come ahead of Jesus would come in the spirit of power, and he would turn the hearts of fathers back to their children. He would turn the disobedient back to God and His righteousness. His name was John the Baptist.

We read in Luk 1:16-17, *"And he will turn back many of the sons of Israel to the Lord their God. And it is he who will go as a forerunner before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers back to the children, and the disobedient to the attitude of the righteous; so as to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."* It would be the role of the forerunner to announce the Messiah's arrival. Christmas is a time when we, as ambassadors of Christ (Eph 6:20, 2Co 5:20), should announce that the Messiah has come, by whatever means possible.

The words of Malachi, 400 years before the birth of John the Baptist, were written at the beginning of the *intertestament* period (between the Old and New Testaments), during which no further scripture was given to the Jews. The voice of no prophet was heard, and the pen of the scriptural writer was silent. It was as if God had abandoned His people, and they were left to wonder if Malachi's prediction would ever come to pass—if the Sun would ever shine again. No one in those days would have expected God to begin His process of change in the lives of a “senior citizen” couple, a couple who had long since forgotten about being all that significant in God's plan, especially since they lived in the days of Herod, Luk 1:5, *“In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there was a certain priest named Zacharias, of the division of Abijah; and he had a wife from the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.”*

Herod the “great” was the one who, according to Mat 2:16, murdered all the male children in Bethlehem and its suburbs, of age two years and under. Herod was a terrible tyrant and a political savage. At this time when violence, cruelty, and craftiness ruled the throne of the political authorities over the Jews, when the tunnel seemed longest and darkest, who would have ever expected that God would step in and bring fulfillment to the words of Malachi? No one did!

Notice something very interesting in Luk 1:5, *“In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there was a certain priest named Zacharias.”* Notice the phrase “a certain priest.” In the midst of the darkness, discouragement, and depression of an era when it seemed that God would be silent for the rest of time, God slipped onto the scene of this earth, and He pointed to an aging priest. His wife was an aging, gray-headed woman; she was barren and many Jews believed that she had been cursed by God. Zacharias and Elizabeth were childless, which was a tragedy for a married couple in that time. According to the Jewish Rabbis, there were seven kinds of people who were excommunicated from God; the list began: “A Jew who has no wife, or a Jew who has a wife and who has no child.” Today, we do not live in a land where childlessness is a disgrace. However, in spite of their times, and in spite of their barrenness, we read some beautiful words about Zacharias and Elizabeth in Luk 1:5-9, *“In the days of Herod, king of Judea, there was a certain priest named Zacharias, of the division of Abijah; and he had a wife from the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. And they were both righteous in the sight of God, walking blamelessly in all the commandments and requirements of the Lord. And they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and they were both advanced in years. Now it came about, while he was performing his priestly service before God in the appointed order of his division, according to the custom of the priestly office, he was chosen by lot to enter the temple of the Lord and burn incense.”*

This may sound like a mundane, boring job to us in the twenty-first century A.D. However, at the time, it was considered a great privilege. The common practice was that the priest would go into the Temple accompanied by two associates who would stir up the coals and add fuel to the coals to get them burning hot. Then he would step into the holy presence of God, and he would pour the incense upon the altar, which would explode into a cloud of incense and smoke, an aroma for “the nostrils of God.” It was Zachariah's privilege to perform this task because there were 20,000 or more priests who lived in or around Jerusalem, and many of them never had this privilege. It would not be uncommon for a man to go through all his years as a priest and never be drawn by lot to enter into the holiest place of all. Little did Zacharias realize it was about to become one of the greatest moments of his life, and that even this experience would be insignificant compared to what was coming in the future.

While he was inside, the congregation remained outside, Luk 1:10, *“And the whole multitude of the people were in prayer outside at the hour of the incense offering.”* They would be waiting in prayer; sometimes they would break into spontaneous song, which they would sing awaiting the return of the priest. No priest stayed inside the temple long, lest he profane the sacred place of the Shekinah glory of God. But Zacharias was gone for quite a while, Luk 1:11, *“And an angel of the Lord appeared to him,*

*standing to the right of the altar of incense.*” There are two angels named for us in scripture—Michael and Gabriel. This is Gabriel, the messenger angel, who will come again in the near future to bring a message to Mary (who has no idea that she is about to be visited by the same angel). He is the same angel who visited Daniel centuries ago. The limitations of space and time do not affect supernatural beings.

We now read in verse 12, *“And Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear gripped him.”* Of course he was troubled and fear gripped him; the same would be true of you and me. But God is full of surprises, He never runs out of fresh ideas, and He wants to get Zacharias’ attention. Zacharias stands and stares and cannot believe his ears, when the angel speaks to him, in fact calling him by name.

We need to start thinking “vertically” (*“Set your mind on the things above,”* Col 3:2), rather than limiting ourselves by thinking “horizontally” (*“Do not love the world,”* 1Jo 2:15). We are trained and experienced horizontally in this world, which is all the more reason to become good students of the scriptures so that we may be trained vertically. And if we do, we will not be so surprised when God does something great in our lives. Zacharias is stunned and awakened by the presence of the angel, who says to him, “your petition has been heard,” Luk 1:13-14, *“But the angel said to him, ‘Do not be afraid, Zacharias, for your petition has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, and you will give him the name John. And you will have joy and gladness, and many will rejoice at his birth.’”* He was essentially saying, “Malachi told the truth.” What Malachi had prophesied was coming to pass.

Gabriel continues in Luk 1:15-17, *“For he will be great in the sight of the Lord, and he will drink no wine or liquor; and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit, while yet in his mother’s womb. [The Greek word for “filled” here is not pleroo, used for the filling of the Spirit; it is pletho, which means supplied, accomplished, or furnished.] And he will turn back many of the sons of Israel to the Lord their God. And it is he who will go as a forerunner before Him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers back to the children, and the disobedient to the attitude of the righteous; so as to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.”* The angel is saying that Malachi’s words are true, and your wife will bear the forerunner of the Messiah.

What an honor for Elizabeth and for Zacharias to be the parents of the forerunner of Messiah! However, Zacharias gets hung up on the statement, “Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son,” and this is where he stops listening. Like many of us, he was a man who was fixed on the horizontal rather than the vertical. He focused on age; he gave in to doubts and skepticism. People will always remind us of the limitations, but we must learn to live in the freedom of the future rather than the guilt of the past.

Zacharias does not come right out and say, “I don’t believe you Gabriel.” He does it much more subtly, Luk 1:18-19, *“And Zacharias said to the angel, ‘How shall I know this for certain? For I am an old man, and my wife is advanced in years.’ And the angel answered and said to him, ‘I am Gabriel, who stands in the presence of God; and I have been sent to speak to you, and to bring you this good news.’”* Gabriel says, “I am the mighty one of God (which is what the name “Gabriel” means), and I stand in the presence of the living God.” Imagine the centuries Gabriel has been there and the things he has seen and heard. He has known one miracle after another. It is unacceptable to Gabriel to question the power of the living God, even by implication. So he responds with words of judgment, but also of mercy, Luk 1:20, *“And behold, you shall be silent and unable to speak until the day when these things take place, because you did not believe my words, which shall be fulfilled in their proper time.”* Until Zacharias’ wife conceives, carries, and bears the child and he names him John at his circumcision, Zacharias will not speak a word.

The people are still outside the temple waiting for him and wondering where the priest could be, wondering if perhaps he profaned the altar of incense. Perhaps he had incurred reproof, or even his own death! The story continues in Luk 1:21, *“And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and were wondering at his delay in the temple.”* This is the greatest message of Zacharias’ life; God’s message

delivered by Gabriel, instilled in his soul, and left for him to announce to the nation, and all he can do is go out and shake his head and move his arms and hands, Luk 1:22, "But when he came out, he was unable to speak to them; and they realized that he had seen a vision in the temple; and he kept making signs to them, and remained mute." This man has had such a great experience, but he is not able to communicate it! And he will learn a lesson in silence he never learned when he had speech. He is learning that when God gives you a promise, you can count on Him keeping that promise. To think that an "ordinary" couple would be the vehicle for giving birth to the forerunner—what a contribution to the world! And they were not better than you and me—God used them, and He can use you.

Notice that there is nothing mentioned of any unbelief on Elizabeth's part; as far as we know, she never questioned it, Luk 1:23-25, "*And it came about, when the days of his priestly service were ended, that he went back home. And after these days Elizabeth his wife became pregnant; and she kept herself in seclusion for five months, saying, 'This is the way the Lord has dealt with me in the days when He looked with favor upon me, to take away my disgrace among men.'*" Notice the difference. She says, "This is the way the Lord has dealt with me in the days when He looked with favor upon me," as opposed to her husband, who said, "How shall I know for certain?"

When God sends those surprises, He has something very special in mind. The story of Zacharias and Elizabeth is not over, but we have already seen some great lessons to live by:

1. Our impossibilities are the platforms upon which God does His best work. You may have a son or daughter who is out of control and impossible for you to discipline...you may have a marriage that is waning and it looks as though there is no hope... This is where God proves that nothing is impossible with Him.
2. God can do His best work when we are faced with such impossible situations. Your health, job situation, and all other problems can never frustrate God and His plan. There are lessons to be learned in the waiting period until He comes through and deals with the situation.
3. God's delays are not necessarily His denials. Don't misinterpret a "wait" for a "no." Don't assume that if the solution has not come in a matter of a few days or a few weeks, that God is saying "no" or "never"; He is simply saying, "not right now." And rather than allowing this to be a cause for doubt, let it be a cause for growth. Use this as a time to dive into the doctrinal principles that you have so long taken for granted.
4. When God intervenes, His surprises are always for His *immediate glory* and for our *ultimate good*...even the unplanned pregnancies, the unexpected calamities. As Job said, "*Shall I receive good at the hand of God and not calamity also? Shall I give him praise for good health and curse His name when ill health strikes?*"

God is a sovereign God who has the right to say "no," just as He has the sovereign right to say "yes." If you believe that He is a gracious God only when He says "yes," you will live a very confused life. He is a sovereign God who has every right to surprise us. Whatever your life has been like over the last year, you are no match for God. He has wonderfully and graciously brought you to this place where you will listen, and He is pointing you to His son Jesus Christ, who has now come and died, and He is saying to you, "Start there, at the Cross." Begin rebuilding your whole life around His eternal perspective and you will never be the same. We are all facing a series of great opportunities, brilliantly disguised as impossible situations.